



The Open  
University

SET BOOK

# Collins

BESTSELLING BILINGUAL DICTIONARIES

easy learning

# Spanish Grammar

OVER  
**TWO  
MILLION**  
COPIES SOLD  
easy learning

*IN COLOUR*



Start using Collins online  
[www.collinslanguage.com/easyresources](http://www.collinslanguage.com/easyresources)

**FREE**





# Collins Spanish Grammar

## CONTENTS

When you buy a Collins dictionary or thesaurus and register on www.collinsdictionary.com you will receive a digital set of content online and digital set of content charged by HarperCollins. Collins Live Online Dictionary or Thesaurus Live Online Dictionary or Thesaurus on www.collinsdictionary.com

Collins® and Bank of English® registered trademarks of HarperCollins Publishers Limited www.collinsdictionary.com

A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library. Typeset by David Futrell in Italy by Fontana Lombarda SpA

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise, without the prior permission of the publisher. This book is sold subject to the conditions that it shall not, by way of trade or otherwise, be lent, re-sold, hired out or otherwise circulated without the publisher's prior consent in any form of binding or cover other than that in which it is published and without a similar condition including this condition being imposed on the subsequent purchaser.

Entered words that we have chosen to believe constitute trademarks have been designated as such. However, neither the presence nor absence of such designation should be regarded as affecting the legal status of any trademark.

Contributors  
Cordelia Lilly  
José María Ruiz Vaca  
Fernando León Solís  
Di Lillo  
Wesley Hill  
Di Lillo, Foreign Languages Consultant and Irene Muir, Faculty Head, Belmont House School, for all their advice on teaching practice in Italy's classroom. Their comments have been invaluable in the writing of this book.



## HarperCollins Publishers

Westerhill Road  
Bishopbriggs  
Glasgow  
G64 2QT  
Great Britain

First Edition 2004

Reprint 12 11 10 9 8

© HarperCollins Publishers 2004

ISBN 978-0-00-719645-6

Collins® and Bank of English® are registered trademarks of HarperCollins Publishers Limited

www.collinslanguage.com

A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library

Typeset by Davidson Pre-Press, Glasgow

Printed in Italy by  
Rotolito Lombarda SpA

## Acknowledgements

We would like to thank those authors and publishers who kindly gave permission for copyright material to be used in the Collins Word Web. We would also like to thank Times Newspapers Ltd for providing valuable data.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise, without the prior permission of the publisher. This book is sold subject to the conditions that it shall not, by way of trade or otherwise, be lent, re-sold, hired out or otherwise circulated without the publisher's prior consent in any form of binding or cover other than that in which it is published and without a similar condition including this condition being imposed on the subsequent purchaser.

Entered words that we have reason to believe constitute trademarks have been designated as such. However, neither the presence nor absence of such designation should be regarded as affecting the legal status of any trademark.

When you buy a Collins dictionary or thesaurus and register on [www.collinslanguage.com](http://www.collinslanguage.com) for the free online and digital services, you will not be charged by HarperCollins for access to Collins free Online Dictionary content or Collins free Online Thesaurus content on that website. However, your operator's charges for using the internet on your computer will apply. Costs vary from operator to operator. HarperCollins is not responsible for any charges levied by online service providers for accessing Collins free Online Dictionary or Collins free Online Thesaurus on [www.collinslanguage.com](http://www.collinslanguage.com) using these services.

HarperCollins does not warrant that the functions contained in [www.collinslanguage.com](http://www.collinslanguage.com) content will be uninterrupted or error free, that defects will be corrected, or that [www.collinslanguage.com](http://www.collinslanguage.com) or the server that makes it available are free of viruses or bugs. HarperCollins is not responsible for any access difficulties that may be experienced due to problems with network, web, online or mobile phone connections.

PUBLISHING DIRECTOR  
Lorna Knight

EDITORIAL DIRECTOR  
Michela Clari

MANAGING EDITOR  
Maree Airlie

CONTRIBUTORS  
Cordelia Lilly  
José María Ruiz Vaca  
Fernando León Solís  
Wendy Lee  
Di Larkin  
Jeremy Butterfield

We would like to give special thanks to Di Larkin, Foreign Languages Consultant, and Irene Muir, Faculty Head, Belmont House School, for all their advice on teaching practice in today's classroom. Their contributions have been invaluable in the writing of this book.

## FOREWORD

## CONTENTS

### Foreword for language teachers

### Introduction for students

### Glossary of grammar terms

### Nouns

Using nouns

Gender

Forming plurals

### Articles

Different types of article

The definite article: **el, la, los** and **las**

The indefinite article: **un, una, unos** and **unas**

The article **lo**

### Adjectives

Using adjectives

Making adjectives agree

Word order with adjectives

Comparatives and superlatives of adjectives

Demonstrative adjectives

Interrogative adjectives

Adjectives used in exclamations

Possessive adjectives (1)

Possessive adjectives (2)

Indefinite adjectives

### Pronouns

Personal pronouns: subject

Personal pronouns: direct object

Personal pronouns: indirect object

Order of object pronouns

Further information on object pronouns

Pronouns after prepositions

Possessive pronouns

Indefinite pronouns

Relative pronouns

Interrogative pronouns

Demonstrative pronouns

### Verbs

Overview of verbs

The present tenses

The present simple tense

**ser** and **estar**

The present continuous tense

v

vi

viii

1

1

2

7

10

10

11

15

17

19

19

20

24

26

30

32

34

35

37

39

41

42

46

49

52

53

54

56

58

61

65

67

69

69

71

72

80

84



The imperative	85
Reflexive verbs	91
The future tense	97
The conditional	100
The preterite	104
The imperfect tense	110
The perfect tense	115
The pluperfect or past perfect tense	119
The passive	122
The gerund	125
Impersonal verbs	129
The subjunctive	134
The infinitive	144
Prepositions after verbs	150
Verbal Idioms	154
<b>Negatives</b>	<b>157</b>
<b>Questions</b>	<b>160</b>
Asking questions in Spanish	160
<b>Adverbs</b>	<b>166</b>
How adverbs are used	166
How adverbs are formed	166
Comparatives and superlatives of adverbs	169
Common adverbs	171
Position of adverbs	177
<b>Prepositions</b>	<b>178</b>
Using prepositions	178
<b>a, de, en, para</b> and <b>por</b>	180
Some other common prepositions	188
<b>Conjunctions</b>	<b>192</b>
<b>y, o, pero, porque</b> and <b>si</b>	192
Some other common conjunctions	194
Split conjunctions	195
<b>Spelling</b>	<b>196</b>
<b>Stress</b>	<b>200</b>
<b>Numbers</b>	<b>206</b>
<b>Time and date</b>	<b>209</b>
<b>Main index</b>	<b>212</b>
<b>Verb tables</b>	<b>1-84</b>
<b>Verb index</b>	<b>85-91</b>
<b>The alphabet</b>	<b>92</b>
<b>Note on trademarks</b>	

Entered words which we have reason to believe constitute trademarks have been designated as such. However, neither the presence nor the absence of such designation should be regarded as affecting the legal status of any trademark.

## FOREWORD FOR LANGUAGE TEACHERS

The *Easy Learning Spanish Grammar* is designed to be used with both young and adult learners, as a group reference book to complement your course book during classes, or as a recommended text for self-study and homework/coursework.

The text specifically targets learners from *ab initio* to intermediate or GCSE level, and therefore its structural content and vocabulary have been matched to the relevant specifications up to and including Higher GCSE.

The approach aims to develop knowledge and understanding of grammar and your learners' ability to apply it by:

- defining parts of speech at the start of each major section with examples in English to clarify concepts
- minimizing the use of grammar terminology and providing clear explanations of terms both within the text and in the **Glossary**
- illustrating points with examples (and their translations) based on topics and contexts which are relevant to beginner and intermediate course content

The text helps you develop positive attitudes to grammar learning in your classes by:

- giving clear, easy-to-follow explanations
- prioritizing content according to relevant specifications for the levels
- sequencing points to reflect course content, e.g. verb tenses
- highlighting useful **Tips** to deal with common difficulties
- summarizing **Key points** at the end of sections to consolidate learning

In addition to fostering success and building a thorough foundation in Spanish grammar, the optional **Grammar Extra** sections will encourage and challenge your learners to further their studies to higher and advanced levels.



## INTRODUCTION FOR STUDENTS

Whether you are starting to learn Spanish for the very first time, brushing up on topics you have studied in class, or revising for your GCSE exams, the *Easy Learning Spanish Grammar* is here to help. This easy-to-use guide takes you through all the basics you will need to speak and understand modern, everyday Spanish.

Newcomers can sometimes struggle with the technical terms they come across when they start to explore the grammar of a new language. The *Easy Learning Spanish Grammar* explains how to get to grips with all the parts of speech you will need to know, using simple language and cutting out jargon.

The text is divided into sections, each dealing with a particular area of grammar. Each section can be studied individually, as numerous cross-references in the text guide you to relevant points in other sections of the book for further information.

Every major section begins with an explanation of the area of grammar covered on the following pages. For quick reference, these definitions are also collected together on pages viii–xii in a glossary of essential grammar terms.

### What is a verb?

A **verb** is a 'doing' word which describes what someone or something does, what someone or something is, or what happens to them, for example, *be, sing, live*.

Each grammar point in the text is followed by simple examples of real Spanish, complete with English translations, helping you understand the rules. Underlining has been used in examples throughout the text to highlight the grammatical point being explained.

- In orders and instructions telling someone **TO DO** something, the pronoun joins onto the end of the verb to form one word.

**Ayúdame.**

Help me.

**Acompáñanos.**

Come with us.

In Spanish, as with any foreign language, there are certain pitfalls which have to be avoided. **Tips** and **Information** notes throughout the text are useful reminders of the things that often trip learners up.

### Tip

Don't forget to use personal **a** before indefinite pronouns referring to people when they are the object of a verb.

¿Viste **a** alguien?

Did you see anybody?

No vi **a** nadie.

I didn't see anybody.

**Key points** sum up all the important facts about a particular area of grammar, to save you time when you are revising and help you focus on the main grammatical points.

### Key points

- ✓ Like other adjectives, Spanish indefinite adjectives (such as **otro** and **todo**), must agree with what they describe.
- ✓ They go before the noun to which they relate.

If you think you would like to continue with your Spanish studies to a higher level, check out the **Grammar Extra** sections. These are intended for advanced students who are interested in knowing a little more about the structures they will come across beyond GCSE.

### Grammar Extra!

**por** is often combined with other Spanish prepositions and words, usually to show movement.

**Saltó por encima de la mesa.**

She jumped over the table.

**Nadamos por debajo del puente.**

We swam under the bridge.

**Pasaron por delante de Correos.**

They went past the post office.

Finally, the supplement at the end of the book contains **Verb Tables**, where 83 important Spanish verbs (both regular and irregular) are conjugated in full. Examples show you how to use these verbs in your own work. If you are unsure how a verb is conjugated in Spanish, you can look up the **Verb Index** on pages 85–91 to find a cross-reference to a model verb.

We hope that you will enjoy using the *Easy Learning Spanish Grammar* and find it useful in the course of your studies.



## GLOSSARY OF GRAMMAR TERMS

**ABSTRACT NOUN** a word used to refer to a quality, idea, feeling or experience, rather than a physical object, for example, *size, reason, happiness*. Compare with **concrete noun**.

**ACTIVE** a form of the verb that is used when the subject of the verb is the person or thing doing the action, for example, *I wrote a letter*. Compare with **passive**.

**ADJECTIVE** a 'describing' word that tells you more about a person or thing, such as their appearance, colour, size or other qualities, for example, *pretty, blue, big*.

**ADVERB** a word usually used with verbs, adjectives or other adverbs that gives more information about when, where, how or in what circumstances something happens or to what degree something is true, for example, *quickly, happily, now, extremely, very*.

**AGREE (to)** in the case of adjectives and pronouns, to have the correct word ending or form according to whether what is referred to is masculine, feminine, singular or plural; in the case of verbs, to have the form which goes with the person or thing carrying out the action.

**APOSTROPHE s** an ending ('s) added to a noun to show who or what someone or something belongs to, for example, *Danielle's dog, the doctor's wife, the book's cover*.

**ARTICLE** a word like *the, a* and *an*, which is used in front of a noun. See also **definite article, indefinite article**.

**AUXILIARY VERB** a verb such as *be, have* or *do* used with a main verb to form tenses, negatives and questions.

**BASE FORM** the form of the verb without any endings added to it, for example, *walk, have, be, go*.

**CARDINAL NUMBER** a number used in counting, for example, *one, seven, ninety*. Compare with **ordinal number**.

**CLAUSE** a group of words containing a verb.

**COMPARATIVE** an adjective or adverb with *-er* on the end of it or *more* or *less* in front of it that is used to compare people, things or actions, for example, *slower, less important, more carefully*.

**COMPOUND NOUN** a word for a living being, thing or idea, which is made up of two or more words, for example, *tin-opener, railway station*.

**CONCRETE NOUN** a word that refers to an object you can touch with your hand, rather than to a quality or idea, for example, *ball, map, apples*. Compare with **abstract noun**.

**CONDITIONAL** a verb form used to talk about things that would happen or would be true under certain conditions, for example, *I would help you if I could*. It is also used to say what you would like or need, for example, *Could you give me the bill?*

**CONJUGATE (to)** to give a verb different endings according to whether you are referring to *I, you, they* and so on, and according to whether you are referring to the present, past or future, for example, *I have, she had, they will have*.

**CONJUGATION** a group of verbs which have the same endings as each other or change according to the same pattern.

**CONJUNCTION** a word such as *and, because* or *but* that links two words or

phrases of a similar type or two parts of a sentence, for example, *Diane and I have been friends for years; I left because I was bored*.

**CONSONANT** a letter that isn't a vowel, for example, *b, f, m, s, v* and so on. Compare with **vowel**.

**CONTINUOUS TENSE** a verb tense formed using *to be* and the *-ing* form of the main verb, for example, *They're swimming* (present continuous); *He was eating* (past continuous).

**DEFINITE ARTICLE** the word *the*. Compare with **indefinite article**.

**DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVE** one of the words *this, that, these* and *those* used with a noun to refer to particular people or things, for example, *this woman, that dog*.

**DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN** one of the words *this, that, these* and *those* used instead of a noun to point out people or things, for example, *That looks fun*.

**DIRECT OBJECT** a noun or pronoun used with verbs to show who or what is acted on by the verb. For example, in *He wrote a letter* and *He wrote me a letter*, *letter* is the direct object. Compare **indirect object**.

**DIRECT OBJECT PRONOUN** a word such as *me, him, us* and *them* which is used instead of a noun to stand in for the person or thing most directly affected by the action expressed by the verb. Compare with **indirect object pronoun**.

**ENDING** a form added to a verb, for example, *go* → *goes*, and to adjectives and nouns depending on whether they refer to masculine, feminine, singular or plural things.

**EXCLAMATION** a word, phrase or sentence that you use to show you are surprised, shocked, angry and so on,

for example, *Wow!*; *How dare you!*; *What a surprise!*

**FEMININE** a form of noun, pronoun or adjective that is used to refer to a living being, thing or idea that is not classed as masculine.

**FUTURE** a verb tense used to talk about something that will happen or will be true.

**GENDER** whether a noun, pronoun or adjective is feminine or masculine.

**GERUND** a verb form in English ending in *-ing*, for example, *eating, sleeping*.

**IMPERATIVE** the form of a verb used when giving orders and instructions, for example, *Shut the door!*; *Sit down!*; *Don't go!*; *Let's eat*.

**IMPERFECT** one of the verb tenses used to talk about the past, especially in descriptions, and to say what was happening or used to happen, for example, *It was sunny at the weekend*; *We were living in Spain at the time*; *I used to walk to school*. Compare to **preterite**.

**IMPERSONAL VERB** a verb whose subject is *it*, but where the *it* does not refer to any specific thing, for example, *It's raining*; *It's 10 o'clock*.

**INDEFINITE ADJECTIVE** one of a small group of adjectives used to talk about people or things in a general way, without saying who or what they are, for example, *several, all, every*.

**INDEFINITE ARTICLE** the words *a* and *an*. Compare with **definite article**.

**INDICATIVE** ordinary verb forms that aren't subjunctive, such as the present, preterite or future. Compare with **subjunctive**.

**INDEFINITE PRONOUN** a small group of pronouns such as *everything, nobody* and *something*, which are used to refer



to people or things in a general way, without saying exactly who or what they are.

**INDIRECT OBJECT** a noun or pronoun used with verbs to show who benefits or is harmed by an action. For example, in *I gave the carrot to the rabbit*, *the rabbit* is the indirect object and *the carrot* is the direct object. Compare with **direct object**.

**INDIRECT OBJECT PRONOUN** a pronoun used with verbs to show who benefits or is harmed by an action. For example, in *I gave him the carrot* and *I gave it to him*, *him* is the indirect object and the *carrot* and *it* are the direct objects. Compare with **direct object pronoun**.

**INDIRECT QUESTION** a question that is embedded in another question or instruction such as *Can you tell me what time it is?*; *Tell me why you did it*. Also used for reported speech such as *He asked me why I did it*.

**INDIRECT SPEECH** the words you use to report what someone has said when you aren't using their actual words, for example, *He said that he was going out*. Also called **reported speech**.

**INFINITIVE** a form of the verb that hasn't any endings added to it and doesn't relate to any particular tense. In English the infinitive is usually shown with *to*, as in *to speak*, *to eat*.

**INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVE** a question word used with a noun, for example, *What instruments do you play?*; *Which shoes do you like?*

**INTERROGATIVE PRONOUN** one of the words *who*, *whose*, *whom*, *what* and *which* when they are used instead of a noun to ask questions, for example, *What's that?*; *Who's coming?*

**INTRANSITIVE VERB** a type of verb that does not take a direct object, for

example, *to sleep*, *to rise*, *to swim*. Compare with **transitive verb**.

**INVARIABLE** used to describe a form which does not change.

**IRREGULAR VERB** a verb whose forms do not follow a general pattern. Compare with **regular verb**.

**MASCULINE** a form of noun, pronoun or adjective that is used to refer to a living being, thing or idea that is not classed as feminine.

**NEGATIVE** a question or statement which contains a word such as *not*, *never* or *nothing*, and is used to say that something is not happening, is not true or is absent, for example, *I never eat meat*; *Don't you love me?* Compare with **positive**.

**NOUN** a 'naming' word for a living being, thing or idea, for example, *woman*, *desk*, *happiness*, *Andrew*.

**NOUN GROUP, NOUN PHRASE** a word or group of words that acts as the subject or object of a verb, or as the object of a preposition, for example, *my older sister*; *the man next door*; *that big house on the corner*.

**NUMBER** used to say how many things you are referring to or where something comes in a sequence. See also **ordinal number** and **cardinal number**. Also the condition of being singular or plural.

**OBJECT** a noun or pronoun which refers to a person or thing that is affected by the action described by the verb. Compare with **direct object**, **indirect object** and **subject**.

**OBJECT PRONOUN** one of the set of pronouns including *me*, *him* and *them*, which are used instead of the noun as the object of a verb or preposition. Compare with **subject pronoun**.

**ORDINAL NUMBER** a number used to indicate where something comes in an **order** or sequence, for example, *first*, *fifth*, *sixteenth*. Compare with **cardinal number**.

**PART OF SPEECH** a word class, for example, *noun*, *verb*, *adjective*, *preposition*, *pronoun*.

**PASSIVE** a form of the verb that is used when the subject of the verb is the person or thing that is affected by the action, for example, *we were told*.

**PAST PARTICIPLE** a verb form which is used to form perfect and pluperfect tenses and passives, for example, *watched*, *swum*. Some past participles are also used as adjectives, for example, *a broken watch*.

**PAST PERFECT** see **pluperfect**.

**PERFECT** a verb form used to talk about what has or hasn't happened, for example, *I've broken my glasses*; *We haven't spoken about it*.

**PERSON** one of the three classes: the first person (*I*, *we*), the second person (*you* singular and *you* plural), and the third person (*he*, *she*, *it* and *they*).

**PERSONAL PRONOUN** one of the group of words including *I*, *you* and *they* which are used to refer to you, the people you are talking to, or the people or things you are talking about.

**PLUPERFECT** one of the verb tenses used to describe something that **had** happened or **had** been true at a point in the past, for example, *I'd forgotten to finish my homework*. Also called **past perfect**.

**PLURAL** the form of a word which is used to refer to more than one person or thing. Compare with **singular**.

**POSITIVE** a positive sentence or instruction is one that does not contain a negative word such as *not*. Compare with **negative**.

**POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVE** one of the words *my*, *your*, *his*, *her*, *its*, *our* or *their*, used with a noun to show who it belongs to.

**POSSESSIVE PRONOUN** one of the words *mine*, *yours*, *hers*, *his*, *ours* or *theirs*, used instead of a noun to show who something belongs to.

**PREPOSITION** is a word such as *at*, *for*, *with*, *into* or *from*, which is usually followed by a noun, pronoun or, in English, a word ending in *-ing*. Prepositions show how people and things relate to the rest of the sentence, for example, *She's at home*; *a tool for cutting grass*; *It's from David*.

**PRESENT** a verb form used to talk about what is true at the moment, what happens regularly, and what is happening now, for example, *I'm a student*; *I travel to college by train*; *I'm studying languages*.

**PRESENT PARTICIPLE** a verb form in English ending in *-ing*, for example, *eating*, *sleeping*.

**PRETERITE** a verb form used to talk about actions that were completed in the past in Spanish. It often corresponds to the ordinary past tense in English, for example, *I bought a new bike*; *Mary went to the shops on Friday*; *I typed two reports yesterday*.

**PRONOUN** a word which you use instead of a noun, when you do not need or want to name someone or something directly, for example, *it*, *you*, *none*.

**PROPER NOUN** the name of a person, place, organization or thing. Proper nouns are always written with a capital letter, for example, *Kevin*, *Glasgow*, *Europe*, *London Eye*.

**QUESTION WORD** a word such as *why*, *where*, *who*, *which* or *how* which is used to ask a question.



**RADICAL-CHANGING VERBS** in Spanish, verbs which change their stem or root in certain tenses and in certain persons.

**REFLEXIVE PRONOUN** a word ending in *-self* or *-selves*, such as *myself* or *themselves*, which refers back to the subject, for example, *He hurt himself*; *Take care of yourself*.

**REFLEXIVE VERB** a verb where the subject and object are the same, and where the action 'reflects back' on the subject. A reflexive verb is used with a reflexive pronoun such as *myself*, *yourself*, *herself*; for example, *I washed myself*; *He shaved himself*.

**REGULAR VERB** a verb whose forms follow a general pattern or the normal rules. Compare with **irregular verb**.

**RELATIVE PRONOUN** a word such as *that*, *who* or *which*, when it is used to link two parts of a sentence together.

**REPORTED SPEECH** see **indirect speech**.

**SENTENCE** a group of words which usually has a verb and a subject. In writing, a sentence begins with a capital and ends with a full stop, question mark or exclamation mark.

**SIMPLE TENSE** a verb tense in which the verb form is made up of one word, rather than being formed from *to have* and a past participle or *to be* and an *-ing* form; for example, *She plays tennis*; *He wrote a book*.

**SINGULAR** the form of a word which is used to refer to one person or thing. Compare with **plural**.

**STEM** the main part of a verb to which endings are added.

**SUBJECT** a noun or pronoun that refers to the person or thing doing the action or being in the state described by

the verb, for example, *My cat doesn't drink milk*. Compare with **object**.

**SUBJECT PRONOUN** a word such as *I*, *he*, *she* and *they* which carries out the action described by the verb. Pronouns stand in for nouns when it is clear who is being talked about, for example, *My brother isn't here at the moment*. *He'll be back in an hour*. Compare with **object pronoun**.

**SUBJUNCTIVE** a verb form used in certain circumstances to indicate some sort of feeling, or to show doubt about whether something will happen or whether something is true. It is only used occasionally in modern English, for example, *If I were you, I wouldn't bother*; *So be it*.

**SUPERLATIVE** an adjective or adverb with *-est* on the end of it or *most* or *least* in front of it that is used to compare people, things or actions, for example, *thinnest*, *most quickly*, *least interesting*.

**SYLLABLE** consonant+vowel units that make up the sounds of a word, for example, *ca-the-dral* (3 syllables), *im-po-ssi-ble* (4 syllables).

**TENSE** the form of a verb which shows whether you are referring to the past, present or future.

**TRANSITIVE VERB** a type of verb that takes a direct object, for example, *to spend*, *to raise*, *to waste*. Compare with **intransitive verb**.

**VERB** a 'doing' word which describes what someone or something does, is, or what happens to them, for example, *be*, *sing*, *live*.

**VOWEL** one of the letters *a*, *e*, *i*, *o* or *u*. Compare with **consonant**.

## NOUNS

### What is a noun?

A **noun** is a 'naming' word for a living being, thing or idea, for example, *woman*, *desk*, *happiness*, *Andrew*.

### Using nouns

- In Spanish, all nouns are either **masculine** or **feminine**. This is called their **gender**. Even words for things have a gender.
- Whenever you are using a noun, you need to know whether it is masculine or feminine as this affects the form of other words used with it, such as:
  - adjectives that describe it
  - articles (such as **el** or **una**) that go before it
- ⇒ For more information on **Articles and Adjectives**, see pages 10 and 19.
- You can find information about gender by looking the word up in a dictionary. When you come across a new noun, always learn the word for *the* or *a* that goes with it to help you remember its gender.
  - **el** or **un** before a noun tells you it is masculine
  - **la** or **una** before a noun tells you it is feminine
- We refer to something as **singular** when we are talking about just one of them, and as **plural** when we are talking about more than one. The singular is the form of the noun you will usually find when you look a noun up in the dictionary. As in English, nouns in Spanish change their form in the plural.
- Adjectives, articles and pronouns are also affected by whether a noun is singular or plural.

### Tip

Remember that you have to use the right word for *the*, *a* and so on according to the gender of the Spanish noun.



## Gender

## 1 Nouns referring to people

- Most nouns referring to men and boys are masculine.

<b>el hombre</b>	the man
<b>el rey</b>	the king

- Most nouns referring to women and girls are feminine.

<b>la mujer</b>	the woman
<b>la reina</b>	the queen

- When the same word is used to refer to either men/boys or women/girls, its gender usually changes depending on the sex of the person it refers to.

<b>el estudiante</b>	the (male) student
<b>la estudiante</b>	the (female) student
<b>el belga</b>	the Belgian (man)
<b>la belga</b>	the Belgian (woman)

## Grammar Extra!

Some words for people have only one possible gender, whether they refer to a male or a female.

<b>la persona</b>	the (male or female) person
<b>la víctima</b>	the (male or female) victim

- In English, we can sometimes make a word masculine or feminine by changing the ending, for example, *Englishman* and *Englishwoman* or *prince* and *princess*. In Spanish, very often the ending of a noun changes depending on whether it refers to a man or a woman.

<b>el camarero</b>	the waiter
<b>la camarera</b>	the waitress
<b>el empleado</b>	the employee ( <i>male</i> )
<b>la empleada</b>	the employee ( <i>female</i> )
<b>el inglés</b>	the Englishman
<b>la inglesa</b>	the Englishwoman

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## Tip

Note that a noun ending in **-o** is usually masculine, and a noun ending in **-a** is usually feminine.

- ⇒ For more information on *Masculine and feminine forms of words*, see page 5.

## 2 Nouns referring to animals

- In English we can choose between words like *bull* or *cow*, depending on the sex of the animal. In Spanish too there are sometimes separate words for male and female animals.

<b>el toro</b>	the bull
<b>la vaca</b>	the cow

- Sometimes, the same word with different endings is used for male and female animals.

<b>el perro</b>	the (male) dog
<b>la perra</b>	the (female) dog, bitch
<b>el gato</b>	the (male) cat
<b>la gata</b>	the (female) cat

## Tip

When you do not know or care what sex the animal is, you can usually use the masculine form as a general word.

- Words for other animals don't change according to the sex of the animal. Just learn the Spanish word with its gender, which is always the same.

<b>el sapo</b>	the toad
<b>el hámster</b>	the hamster
<b>la cobaya</b>	the guinea pig
<b>la tortuga</b>	the tortoise

## 3 Nouns referring to things

- In English, we call all things – for example, *table*, *car*, *book*, *apple* – 'it'. In Spanish, however, things are either masculine or feminine. As things don't divide into sexes the way humans and animals do, there are no physical clues to help you with their gender in Spanish. Try to learn the gender as you learn the word.
- There are lots of rules to help you. Certain endings are usually found on masculine nouns, while other endings are usually found on feminine nouns.



► The following ending is usually found on masculine nouns.

Masculine ending	Examples
-o	<b>el libro</b> the book <b>el periódico</b> the newspaper BUT: <b>la mano</b> the hand <b>la foto</b> the photo <b>la moto</b> the motorbike <b>la radio</b> the radio ( <i>although in parts of Latin America, it is <b>el radio</b></i> )

► The following types of word are also masculine.

- names of the days of the week and the months of the year  
**Te veré el lunes.** I'll see you on Monday.
- the names of languages  
**el inglés** English  
**el español** Spanish  
**Estudio el español.** I'm studying Spanish.
- the names of rivers, mountains and seas  
**el Ebro** the Ebro  
**el Everest** Everest  
**el Atlántico** the Atlantic

► The following endings are usually found on feminine nouns.

Feminine ending	Examples
-a	<b>la casa</b> the house <b>la cara</b> the face BUT: <b>el día</b> the day <b>el mapa</b> the map <b>el planeta</b> the planet <b>el tranvía</b> the tram and many words ending in <b>-ma</b> ( <b>el problema</b> the problem, <b>el programa</b> the programme, <b>el sistema</b> the system, <b>el clima</b> the climate)
-ción -sión	<b>la lección</b> the lesson <b>la estación</b> the station <b>la expresión</b> the expression
-dad -tad -tud	<b>la ciudad</b> the city <b>la libertad</b> freedom <b>la multitud</b> the crowd

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

### Grammar Extra!

Some words have different meanings depending on whether they are masculine or feminine.

Masculine	Meaning	Feminine	Meaning
<b>el capital</b>	the capital (meaning <i>money</i> )	<b>la capital</b>	the capital (meaning <i>city</i> )
<b>el cometa</b>	the comet	<b>la cometa</b>	the kite
<b>el cura</b>	the priest	<b>la cura</b>	the cure
<b>el guía</b>	the guide ( <i>man</i> )	<b>la guía</b>	the guidebook; the guide ( <i>woman</i> )

**Invirtieron mucho capital.**

They invested a lot of capital.

**Viven en la capital.**

They live in the capital.

#### 4 Masculine and feminine forms of words

► Like English, Spanish sometimes has very different words for males and females.

<b>el hombre</b>	the man
<b>la mujer</b>	the woman
<b>el rey</b>	the king
<b>la reina</b>	the queen

► Many Spanish words can be used to talk about men or women simply by changing the ending. For example, if the word for the male ends in **-o**, you can almost always make it feminine by changing the **-o** to **-a**.

<b>el amigo</b>	the (male) friend
<b>la amiga</b>	the (female) friend
<b>el hermano</b>	the brother
<b>la hermana</b>	the sister
<b>el empleado</b>	the (male) employee
<b>la empleada</b>	the (female) employee
<b>el viudo</b>	the widower
<b>la viuda</b>	the widow

7 Note that some words referring to people end in **-a** in the masculine as well as in the feminine. Only the article (**el** or **la**, **un** or **una**) can tell you what gender the noun is.

<b>el dentista</b>	the (male) dentist
<b>la dentista</b>	the (female) dentist
<b>el deportista</b>	the sportsman
<b>la deportista</b>	the sportswoman



- Many masculine nouns ending in a consonant (any letter other than a vowel) become feminine by adding an **-a**.

<b>el español</b>	the Spanish man
<b>la española</b>	the Spanish woman
<b>el profesor</b>	the (male) teacher
<b>la profesora</b>	the (female) teacher

### Típ

If the last vowel of the masculine word has an accent, this is dropped in the feminine form.

<b>un inglés</b>	an Englishman
<b>una inglesa</b>	an Englishwoman
<b>un francés</b>	a Frenchman
<b>una francesa</b>	a Frenchwoman

⇒ For more information about **Spelling and Stress**, see pages 196 and 200.

### Key points

- ✓ The ending of a Spanish word often helps you work out its gender: for instance, if a word ends in **-o**, it is probably masculine; if it ends in **-a**, it is probably feminine.
- ✓ These endings generally mean that the noun is feminine: **-ción, -sión, -dad, -tad, -tud**
- ✓ Days of the week and months of the year are masculine. So are languages, mountains and seas.
- ✓ You can change the ending of some nouns from **-o** to **-a** to make a masculine noun feminine.

## Forming plurals

### 1 Plurals ending in **-s** and **-es**

- In English we usually make nouns plural by adding an **-s** to the end (*garden* → *gardens*; *house* → *houses*), although we do have some nouns which are **irregular** and do not follow this pattern (*mouse* → *mice*; *child* → *children*).

### Típ

Remember that you have to use **los** (for **masculine nouns**) or **las** (for **feminine nouns**) with plural nouns in Spanish. Any adjective that goes with the noun also has to agree with it, as does any pronoun that replaces it.

⇒ For more information on **Articles, Adjectives and Pronouns**, see pages 10, 19 and 41.

- To form the plural in Spanish, add **-s** to most nouns ending in a vowel (*a, e, i, o* or *u*) which doesn't have an accent.

<b>el libro</b>	the book
<b>los libros</b>	the books
<b>el hombre</b>	the man
<b>los hombres</b>	the men
<b>la profesora</b>	the (female) teacher
<b>las profesoras</b>	the (female) teachers

- Add **-es** to singular nouns ending in a consonant (any letter other than a vowel).

<b>el profesor</b>	the (male) teacher
<b>los profesores</b>	the (male/male and female) teachers
<b>la ciudad</b>	the town/city
<b>las ciudades</b>	the towns/cities

- 7 Note that some foreign words (that is, words which have come from another language, such as English) ending in a consonant just add **-s**.

<b>el jersey</b>	the jersey
<b>los jerseys</b>	the jerseys



- Words ending in **-s** which have an unstressed final vowel do not change in the plural.

<b>el paraguas</b>	the umbrella
<b>los paraguas</b>	the umbrellas
<b>el lunes</b>	(on) Monday
<b>los lunes</b>	(on) Mondays

⇒ For more information on **Stress**, see page 200.

- Some singular nouns ending in an accented vowel add **-es** in the plural while other very common ones add **-s**.

<b>el jabalí</b>	the boar
<b>los jabalíes</b>	the boars
<b>el café</b>	the café
<b>los cafés</b>	the cafés
<b>el sofá</b>	the sofa
<b>los sofás</b>	the sofas

### Grammar Extra!

When nouns are made up of two separate words, they are called **compound nouns**, for example, **el abrelatas** (meaning *the tin-opener*) and **el hombre rana** (meaning *the frogman*). Some of these nouns don't change in the plural, for example, **los abrelatas**, while others do, for example, **los hombres rana**. It is always best to check in a dictionary to see what the plural is.

### 2 Spelling changes with plurals ending in -es

- Singular nouns which end in an accented vowel and either **-n** or **-s** drop the accent in the plural.

<b>la canción</b>	the song
<b>las canciones</b>	the songs
<b>el autobús</b>	the bus
<b>los autobuses</b>	the buses

- Singular nouns of more than one syllable which end in **-en** and don't already have an accent, add one in the plural.

<b>el examen</b>	the exam
<b>los exámenes</b>	the exams

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

<b>el joven</b>	the youth
<b>los jóvenes</b>	young people

- Singular nouns ending in **-z** change to **-c** in the plural.

<b>la luz</b>	the light
<b>las luces</b>	the lights

<b>la vez</b>	the times
<b>las veces</b>	the times

⇒ For further information on **Spelling and Stress**, see pages 196 and 200.

### 3 Plural versus singular

- A few words relating to clothing that are plural in English can be singular in Spanish.

<b>una braga</b>	(a pair of) knickers
<b>un slip</b>	(a pair of) underpants
<b>un pantalón</b>	(a pair of) trousers

- A few common words behave differently in Spanish from the way they behave in English.

<b>un mueble</b>	a piece of furniture
<b>unos muebles</b>	some furniture
<b>una noticia</b>	a piece of news
<b>unas noticias</b>	some news
<b>un consejo</b>	a piece of advice
<b>unos consejos</b>	some advice

#### Key points

- ✓ Add **-s** to form the plural of a noun ending in an unaccented vowel.
- ✓ Add **-es** to form the plural of most nouns ending in a consonant.
- ✓ Drop the accent when adding plural **-es** to nouns ending in an accented vowel + **-n** or **-s**.
- ✓ Add an accent when adding plural **-es** to words of more than one syllable ending in **-en**.
- ✓ Change **-z** to **-c** when forming the plural of words like **luz**.
- ✓ A few common words are plural in English but not in Spanish.







## 2 a and de with the definite article

► If **a** is followed by **el**, the two words become **al**.

<b>al cine</b>	to the cinema
<b>al empleado</b>	to the employee
<b>al hospital</b>	to the hospital
<b>Vio al camarero.</b>	He saw the waiter.

► If **de** is followed by **el**, the two words become **del**.

<b>del departamento</b>	of/from the department
<b>del autor</b>	of/from the author
<b>del presidente</b>	of/from the president

## 3 Using the definite article

► **el, la, los** and **las** are often used in Spanish in the same way as *the* is used in English. However, there are some cases where the article is used in Spanish but not in English.

► The definite article **IS** used in Spanish:

- when talking about people, animals and things in a general way

<b>Me gustan los animales.</b>	I like animals.
<b>Están subiendo los precios.</b>	Prices are going up.
<b>Me gusta el chocolate.</b>	I like chocolate.
<b>No me gusta el café.</b>	I don't like coffee.
<b>El azúcar es dulce.</b>	Sugar is sweet.

- when talking about abstract qualities, for example, *time, hope, darkness, violence*

<b>El tiempo es oro.</b>	Time is money.
<b>Admiro la sinceridad en la gente.</b>	I admire honesty in people.

ⓘ Note that the definite article is **NOT** used in certain set phrases consisting of **tener** and a noun or after certain prepositions.

<b>tener hambre</b>	to be hungry	(literally: to have hunger)
<b>sin duda</b>	no doubt	(literally: without doubt)
<b>con cuidado</b>	carefully	(literally: with care)

⇒ For more information on **Prepositions**, see page 178.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- when talking about colours  
**El azul es mi color favorito.** Blue is my favourite colour.
- when talking about parts of the body – you do not use *my, your, his* and so on as you would in English

<b>Tiene los ojos verdes.</b>	He's got green eyes.
<b>No puedo mover las piernas.</b>	I can't move my legs.

ⓘ Note that possession is often shown by a personal pronoun in Spanish.

<b>La cabeza me da vueltas.</b>	<u>My</u> head is spinning.
<b>Lávate las manos.</b>	Wash <u>your</u> hands.

⇒ For more information on **Personal pronouns**, see page 42.

- when using someone's title – for example, *Doctor, Mr* – but talking **ABOUT** someone rather than to them.

<b>El doctor Vidal no está.</b>	Dr Vidal isn't here.
<b>El señor Pelayo vive aquí.</b>	Mr Pelayo lives here.

- when talking about institutions, such as school or church

<b>en el colegio</b>	at school
<b>en la universidad</b>	at university
<b>en la iglesia</b>	at church
<b>en el hospital</b>	in hospital
<b>en la cárcel</b>	in prison

- when talking about meals, games or sports

<b>La cena es a las nueve.</b>	Dinner is at nine o'clock.
<b>Me gusta el tenis.</b>	I like tennis.
<b>No me gusta el ajedrez.</b>	I don't like chess.

- when talking about days of the week and dates, where we use the preposition *on* in English

<b>Te veo el lunes.</b>	I'll see you <u>on</u> Monday.
<b>Los lunes tenemos muchos deberes.</b>	We have a lot of homework <u>on</u> Mondays.
<b>Nací el 17 de marzo.</b>	I was born <u>on</u> 17 March.

- when talking about the time

<b>Es la una.</b>	It's one o'clock.
<b>Son las tres.</b>	It's three o'clock.
<b>Son las cuatro y media.</b>	It's half past four.



- when talking about prices and rates

**Cuesta dos euros el kilo.**  
**20 euros la hora**

It costs two euros a kilo.  
20 euros an hour

### Key points

- ✓ Before masculine singular nouns → use **el**.
- ✓ Before feminine singular nouns → use **la**.
- ✓ Before feminine singular nouns starting with stressed **a** or **ha** → use **el**.
- ✓ Before masculine plural nouns → use **los**.
- ✓ Before feminine plural nouns → use **las**.
- ✓ **a + el** → **al**
- ✓ **de + el** → **del**
- ✓ There are some important cases when you would use a definite article in Spanish when you wouldn't in English; for example, when talking about:
  - things in a general way
  - abstract qualities
  - colours
  - parts of the body
  - someone with a title in front of their name
  - institutions
  - meals, games or sports
  - the time, days of the week and dates (*using the preposition on in English*)
  - prices and rates

## The indefinite article: **un, una, unos** and **unas**

### 1 The basic rules

- ▶ In English, the indefinite article is *a*, which changes to *an* when it comes before a vowel or a vowel sound, for example, *an apple*. In the plural, we use *some* or *any*.
- ▶ In Spanish, you have to choose between four indefinite articles: **un, una, unos** and **unas**. Which one you choose depends on the noun that follows.
- ▶ In Spanish, all nouns (including words for things) are either masculine or feminine – this is called their gender. And, just as in English, they can also be either singular or plural. You must bear this in mind when deciding which Spanish word to use for *a*.

⇒ For more information on **Nouns**, see page 1.

- ▶ **un** is used before masculine singular nouns.

<b>un niño</b>	a boy
<b>un periódico</b>	a newspaper

- ▶ **una** is used before feminine singular nouns.

<b>una niña</b>	a girl
<b>una revista</b>	a magazine

- ▶ **unos** is used before masculine plural nouns.

<b>unos niños</b>	some boys
<b>unos periódicos</b>	some newspapers

- ▶ **unas** is used before feminine plural nouns.

<b>unas niñas</b>	some girls
<b>unas revistas</b>	some magazines

- ⓘ Note that you use **un** instead of **una** immediately before a feminine singular word beginning with **a** or **ha** when the stress falls on the beginning of the word. This is because **una** sounds wrong before the 'a' sound.

<b>un ave</b>	a bird
---------------	--------

### 2 Using the indefinite article

- ▶ The indefinite article is often used in Spanish in the same way as it is in English. However, there are some cases where the article is not used in Spanish but is in English, and vice versa.



► The indefinite article is **NOT** used in Spanish:

- when you say what someone's job is

**Es profesor.** He's a teacher.  
**Mi madre es enfermera.** My mother is a nurse.

- after **tener**, **buscar**, or **llevar (puesto)** when you are only likely to have, be looking for or be wearing one of the items in question

**No tengo coche.** I haven't got a car.  
**¿Llevaba sombrero?** Was he wearing a hat?

☑ Note that when you use an adjective to describe the noun, you **DO** use an article in Spanish too.

**Es un buen médico.** He's a good doctor.  
**Tiene una novia española.** He has a Spanish girlfriend.  
**Busca un piso pequeño.** He's looking for a little flat.

► The indefinite article is **NOT** used in Spanish with the words **otro**, **cierto**, **cien**, **mil**, **sin**, and **qué**.

**otro libro** another book  
**cierta calle** a certain street  
**cien soldados** a hundred soldiers  
**mil años** a thousand years  
**sin casa** without a house  
**¡Qué sorpresa!** What a surprise!

► The indefinite article **IS** used in Spanish but **NOT** in English when an abstract noun, such as **inteligencia** (meaning *intelligence*) or **tiempo** (meaning *time*) has an adjective with it.

**Posee una gran inteligencia.** He possesses great intelligence.

### Key points

- ✓ Before masculine singular nouns → use **un**.
- ✓ Before feminine singular nouns → use **una**.
- ✓ Before feminine singular nouns starting with stressed **a** or **ha** → use **un**.
- ✓ Before masculine plural nouns → use **unos**.
- ✓ Before feminine plural nouns → use **unas**.
- ✓ You do not use an indefinite article in Spanish for saying what someone's job is.
- ✓ You do not use an indefinite article in Spanish with the words **otro**, **cierto**, **cien**, **mil**, **sin**, and **qué**.

## The article **lo**

► Unlike the other Spanish articles, and articles in English, **lo** is **NOT** used with a noun.

► **lo** can be used with a masculine singular adjective or past participle (the **-ado** and **-ido** forms of regular verbs) to form a noun.

**Lo único que no me gusta ...** The only thing I don't like ...  
**Esto es lo importante.** That's the important thing.  
**Lo bueno de eso es que ...** The good thing about it is that ...  
**Sentimos mucho lo ocurrido.** We are very sorry about what happened.

⇒ For more information on the **Past participle**, see page 115.

► **lo** is also used in a number of very common phrases:

- **a lo mejor** maybe, perhaps  
**A lo mejor ha salido.** Perhaps he's gone out.
- **por lo menos** at least  
**Hubo por lo menos cincuenta heridos.** At least fifty people were injured.
- **por lo general** generally  
**Por lo general me acuesto temprano.** I generally go to bed early.

► **lo** can also be used with **que** to make **lo que** (meaning *what*).

**Vi lo que pasó.** I saw what happened.  
**Lo que más me gusta es nadar.** What I like best is swimming.

### Grammar Extra!

**lo** can be used with **de** followed by a noun phrase to refer back to something the speaker and listener both know about.

**Lo de tu hermano me preocupa mucho.** That business with your brother worries me a lot.  
**Lo de ayer es mejor que lo olvides.** It would be best to forget what happened yesterday.

For more information on Word order with adjectives, see page 24.



**lo** can be used with an adjective followed by **que** to emphasize how big/small/beautiful and so on something is or was. The adjective must agree with the noun it describes.

**No sabemos lo pequeña que era la casa.** We didn't know how small the house was.

**No te imaginas lo simpáticos que son.** You can't imagine how nice they are.

**lo** can also be used in a similar way with an adverb followed by **que**.

**Sé lo mucho que te gusta la música.** I know how much you like music.

### Key points

- ✓ **lo** is classed as an article in Spanish, but is not used with nouns.
- ✓ You can use **lo** with a masculine adjective or past participle to form a noun.
- ✓ You also use **lo** in a number of common phrases.
- ✓ **lo que** can be used to mean *what* in English.

## ADJECTIVES

### What is an adjective?

An **adjective** is a 'describing' word that tells you more about a person or thing, such as their appearance, colour, size or other qualities, for example, *pretty, blue, big*.

### Using adjectives

- Adjectives are words like *clever, expensive* and *silly* that tell you more about a noun (a living being, thing or idea). They can also tell you more about a pronoun, such as *he* or *they*. Adjectives are sometimes called 'describing words'. They can be used right next to a noun they are describing, or can be separated from the noun by a verb like *be, look, feel* and so on.

a clever girl  
 an expensive coat  
 a silly idea  
 He's just being silly.

⇒ For more information on **Nouns and Pronouns**, see pages 1 and 41.

- In English, the only time an adjective changes its form is when you are making a comparison.

She's cleverer than her brother.  
 That's the silliest idea I've ever heard!

- In Spanish, however, most adjectives agree with what they are describing. This means that their endings change depending on whether the person or thing you are referring to is masculine or feminine, singular or plural.

<b>un chico rubio</b>	a fair boy
<b>una chica rubia</b>	a fair girl
<b>unos chicos rubios</b>	some fair boys
<b>unas chicas rubias</b>	some fair girls

- In English adjectives come BEFORE the noun they describe, but in Spanish you usually put them AFTER it.

**una casa blanca** a white house

⇒ For more information on **Word order with adjectives**, see page 24.



## Making adjectives agree

### 1 Forming feminine adjectives

► The form of the adjective shown in dictionaries is generally the masculine singular form. This means that you need to know how to change its form to make it agree with the person or thing it is describing.

► Adjectives ending in **-o** in the masculine change to **-a** for the feminine.

**mi hermano pequeño** my little brother

**mi hermana pequeña** my little sister

► Adjectives ending in any vowel other than **-o** (that is: *a, e, i* or *u*) or ending in a vowel with an accent on it do **NOT** change for the feminine.

**el vestido verde** the green dress

**la blusa verde** the green blouse

**un pantalón caqui** some khaki trousers

**una camisa caqui** a khaki shirt

**un médico iraquí** an Iraqi doctor

**una familia iraquí** an Iraqi family

► Adjectives ending in a consonant (any letter other than a vowel) do **NOT** change for the feminine except in the following cases:

- Adjectives of nationality or place ending in a consonant add **-a** for the feminine. If there is an accent on the final vowel in the masculine, they lose this in the feminine.

**un periódico inglés** an English newspaper

**una revista inglesa** an English magazine

**el equipo francés** the French team

**la cocina francesa** French cooking

**el vino español** Spanish wine

**la lengua española** the Spanish language

ⓘ Note that these adjectives do not start with a capital letter in Spanish.

- Adjectives ending in **-or** in the masculine usually change to **-ora** for the feminine.

**un niño encantador** a charming little boy

**una niña encantadora** a charming little girl

ⓘ Note that a few adjectives ending in **-or** used in comparisons – such as **mejor** (meaning *better, best*), **peor** (meaning *worse, worst*), **mayor** (meaning *older, bigger*), **superior** (meaning *upper, top*), **inferior** (meaning *lower, inferior*) as well as **exterior** (meaning *outside, foreign*) and **posterior** (meaning *rear*) do not change in the feminine.

- Adjectives ending in **-án, -ón** and **-ín** in the masculine change to **-ana, -ona** and **-ina** (without an accent) in the feminine.

**un gesto burlón** a mocking gesture

**una sonrisa burlona** a mocking smile

**un hombre parlanchín** a chatty man

**una mujer parlanchina** a chatty woman

► Adjectives ending in a consonant but which do not fall into the above categories do **NOT** change in the feminine.

**un chico joven** a young boy

**una chica joven** a young girl

**un final feliz** a happy ending

**una infancia feliz** a happy childhood

### 2 Forming plural adjectives

► Adjectives ending in an unaccented vowel (*a, e, i, o* or *u*) in the singular add **-s** in the plural.

**el último tren** the last train

**los últimos trenes** the last trains

**una casa vieja** an old house

**unas casas viejas** some old houses

**una chica muy habladora** a very chatty girl

**unas chicas muy habladoras** some very chatty girls

**una pintora francesa** a French (woman) painter

**unas pintoras francesas** some French (women) painters

**una mesa verde** a green table

**unas mesas verdes** some green tables

► Adjectives ending in a consonant in the masculine or feminine singular add **-es** in the plural. If there is an accent on the **FINAL** syllable in the singular, they lose it in the plural.

**un chico muy hablador** a very chatty boy

**unos chicos muy habladores** some very chatty boys

**un pintor francés** a French painter

**unos pintores franceses** some French painters



**un examen fácil**  
**unos exámenes fáciles**  
**la tendencia actual**  
**las tendencias actuales**

an easy exam  
 some easy exams  
 the current trend  
 the current trends

- -z at the end of a singular adjective changes to **-ces** in the plural.

**un día feliz**  
**unos días felices**

a happy day  
 happy days

### Típ

When an adjective describes a mixture of both masculine and feminine nouns, use the **masculine plural** form of the adjective.

**El pan y la fruta son baratos.** Bread and fruit are cheap.

### Grammar Extra!

Adjectives ending in an accented vowel in the singular add **-es** in the plural.

**un médico iraní**  
**unos médicos iraníes**

an Iranian doctor  
 some Iranian doctors

### 3 Invariable adjectives

- A small number of adjectives do not change in the feminine or plural. They are called **invariable** because their form **NEVER** changes, no matter what they are describing. These adjectives are often made up of more than one word – for example **azul marino** (meaning *navy blue*) – or come from the names of things – for example **naranja** (meaning *orange*).

**las chaquetas azul marino**  
**los vestidos naranja**

navy-blue jackets  
 orange dresses

### 4 Short forms for adjectives

- The following adjectives drop the final **-o** before a **masculine singular noun**.

<b>bueno</b>	→	<b>buen</b>	→	<b>un buen libro</b>	a good book
<b>malo</b>	→	<b>mal</b>	→	<b>mal tiempo</b>	bad weather
<b>alguno</b>	→	<b>algún</b>	→	<b>algún libro</b>	some book
<b>ninguno</b>	→	<b>ningún</b>	→	<b>ningún hombre</b>	no man
<b>uno</b>	→	<b>un</b>	→	<b>un día</b>	one day
<b>primero</b>	→	<b>primer</b>	→	<b>el primer hijo</b>	the first child
<b>tercero</b>	→	<b>tercer</b>	→	<b>el tercer hijo</b>	the third child

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- ❓ Note that the adjectives **alguno** and **ninguno** add accents when they are shortened to become **algún** and **ningún**.

- **grande** (meaning *big, great*) is shortened to **gran** before a **singular noun**.

**un gran actor**  
**una gran sorpresa**

a great actor  
 a big surprise

- **ciento** (meaning *a hundred*) changes to **cien** before all **plural nouns** as well as before **mil** (meaning *thousand*) and **millones** (meaning *millions*).

**cien años**  
**cien millones**

a hundred years  
 a hundred million

- ❓ Note that you use the form **ciento** before other numbers.

**ciento tres** one hundred and three

- ⇒ For more information on **Numbers**, see page 206.

### Grammar Extra!

- **cualquiera** drops the final **a** before any noun.

**cualquier día**  
**a cualquier hora**

any day  
 any time

### Key points

- ✓ Most Spanish adjectives change their form according to whether the person or thing they are describing is masculine or feminine, singular or plural.
- ✓ In Spanish, adjectives usually go after the noun they describe.
- ✓ Don't forget to make adjectives agree with the person or thing they describe – they change for the feminine and plural forms:  
**un chico español**  
**una chica española**  
**unos chicos españoles**  
**unas chicas españolas**
- ✓ Some adjectives never change their form.
- ✓ Some adjectives drop the final **-o** before a masculine singular noun.
- ✓ **grande** and **ciento** also change before certain nouns.



## Word order with adjectives

- When adjectives are used right beside the noun they are describing, they go **BEFORE** it in English. Spanish adjectives usually go **AFTER** the noun.

<b>una corbata azul</b>	a <b>blue</b> tie
<b>una palabra española</b>	a <b>Spanish</b> word
<b>la página siguiente</b>	the <b>following</b> page
<b>la hora exacta</b>	the <b>precise</b> time

- When you have two or more adjectives after the noun, you use **y** (meaning *and*) between the last two.

**un hombre alto y delgado** a tall, slim man

- A number of types of Spanish adjectives go **BEFORE** the noun:

- demonstrative adjectives

**este sombrero** this hat

- possessive adjectives (**mi**, **tu**, **su** and so on)

**mi padre** my father

- numbers

**tres días** three days

- interrogative adjectives

**¿qué hombre?** which man?

- adjectives used in exclamations

**¡Qué lástima!** What a pity!

- indefinite adjectives

**cada día** every day

- shortened adjectives

**mal tiempo** bad weather

- Some adjectives can go both **BEFORE** and **AFTER** the noun, but their meaning changes depending on where they go.

Adjective	Before Noun	Examples	After Noun	Examples
<b>antiguo</b>	former	<b>un antiguo colega</b> a former colleague	old, ancient	<b>la historia antigua</b> ancient history
<b>diferente</b>	various	<b>diferentes idiomas</b> various languages	different	<b>personas diferentes</b> different people
<b>grande</b>	great	<b>un gran pintor</b> a great painter	big	<b>una casa grande</b> a big house
<b>medio</b>	half	<b>medio melón</b> half a melon	average	<b>la nota media</b> the average mark
<b>mismo</b>	same	<b>la misma respuesta</b> the same answer	self, very, precisely	<b>yo mismo</b> myself <b>eso mismo</b> precisely that
<b>nuevo</b>	new	<b>mi nuevo coche</b> my new car (= <i>new to me</i> )	brand new	<b>unos zapatos nuevos</b> some (brand) new shoes
<b>pobre</b>	poor (= <i>wretched</i> )	<b>esa pobre mujer</b> that poor woman	poor (= <i>not rich</i> )	<b>un país pobre</b> a poor country
<b>viejo</b>	old (= <i>long-standing</i> )	<b>un viejo amigo</b> an old friend	old (= <i>aged</i> )	<b>esas toallas viejas</b> those old towels

### Key points

- ✓ Most Spanish adjectives go after the noun.
- ✓ Certain types of adjectives in Spanish go before the noun.
- ✓ Some adjectives can go before or after the noun – the meaning changes according to the position in the sentence.



## Comparatives and superlatives of adjectives

### 1 Making comparisons using comparative adjectives

#### What is a comparative adjective?

A **comparative adjective** in English is one with *-er* on the end of it or *more* or *less* in front of it, that is used to compare people or things, for example, *cleverer, less important, more beautiful*.

- In Spanish, to say something is *cheaper, more expensive* and so on, you use **más** (meaning *more*) before the adjective.

**Esta bicicleta es más barata.** This bicycle is cheaper.

**La verde es más cara.** The green one is more expensive.

- To say something is *less expensive, less beautiful* and so on, you use **menos** (meaning *less*) before the adjective.

**La verde es menos cara.** The green one is less expensive.

- To introduce the person or thing you are making the comparison with, use **que** (meaning *than*).

**Es más alto que mi hermano.** He's taller than my brother.

**La otra bicicleta es más cara que ésta.** The other bicycle is more expensive than this one.

**Esta bicicleta es menos cara que la otra.** This bicycle is less expensive than the other one.

### Grammar Extra!

When *than* in English is followed by a verbal construction, use **de lo que** rather than **que** alone.

**Está más cansada de lo que parece.** She is more tired than she seems.

### 2 Making comparisons using superlative adjectives

#### What is a superlative adjective?

A **superlative adjective** in English is one with *-est* on the end of it or *most* or *least* in front of it, that is used to compare people or things, for example, *thinnest, most beautiful, least interesting*.

- In Spanish, to say something is *the cheapest, the most expensive* and so on, you use **el/la/los/las** (+ noun) + **más** + adjective.

**el caballo más viejo** the oldest horse

**la casa más pequeña** the smallest house

**los hoteles más baratos** the cheapest hotels

**las manzanas más caras** the most expensive apples

**¿Quién es el más alto?** Who's the tallest?

- To say something is *the least expensive, the least intelligent* and so on, you use **el/la/los/las** (+ noun) + **menos** + adjective.

**el hombre menos simpático** the least likeable man

**la niña menos habladora** the least talkative girl

**los cuadros menos bonitos** the least attractive paintings

**las empleadas menos trabajadoras** the least hardworking (female) employees

**¿Quién es el menos trabajador?** Who's the least hardworking?

### Tip

In phrases like *the cleverest girl in the school* and *the tallest man in the world*, you use **de** to translate *in*.

**el hombre más alto del mundo** the tallest man in the world

### 3 Irregular comparatives and superlatives

- Just as English has some irregular comparative and superlative forms – *better* instead of *'more good'*, and *worst* instead of *'most bad'* – Spanish also has a few irregular forms.

Adjective	Meaning	Comparative	Meaning	Superlative	Meaning
<b>bueno</b>	good	<b>mejor</b>	better	<b>el mejor</b>	the best
<b>malo</b>	bad	<b>peor</b>	worse	<b>el peor</b>	the worst
<b>grande</b>	big	<b>mayor</b>	older	<b>el mayor</b>	the oldest
<b>pequeño</b>	small	<b>menor</b>	younger	<b>el menor</b>	the youngest

**Éste es mejor que el otro.** This one is better than the other one.

**Es el mejor de todos.** It's the best of the lot.

**Hoy me siento peor.** I feel worse today.

**la peor alumna de la clase** the worst student in the class



- 7 Note that **mejor**, **peor**, **mayor** and **menor** don't change their endings in the feminine. In the plural, they become **mejores**, **peores**, **mayores** and **menores**. Don't forget to use **el**, **la**, **los** or **las** as appropriate, depending on whether the person or thing described is masculine or feminine, singular or plural.

### Típ

**más grande** and **más pequeño** are used mainly to talk about the actual size of something.

<b>Este plato es más grande que aquél.</b>	This plate is bigger than that one.
<b>Mi casa es más pequeña que la tuya.</b>	My house is smaller than yours.

**mayor** and **menor** are used mainly to talk about age.

<b>mis hermanos mayores</b>	my older brothers
<b>la hija menor</b>	the youngest daughter

#### 4 Other ways of making comparisons

- To say *as ... as* (for example, *as pretty as*, *not as pretty as*) you use **tan ... como** in Spanish.

<b>Pedro es tan alto como Miguel.</b>	Pedro is as tall as Miguel.
<b>No es tan guapa como su madre.</b>	She isn't as pretty as her mother.
<b>No es tan grande como yo creía.</b>	It isn't as big as I thought.

### Grammar Extra!

You use **tanto** with a noun rather than **tan** with an adjective in some expressions. This is because in Spanish you would use a noun where in English we would use an adjective.

<b>Pablo tiene tanto miedo como yo.</b>	Pablo is as frightened as I am.
<b>Yo no tengo tanta hambre como tú.</b>	I'm not as hungry as you are.

- To make an adjective stronger, you can use **muy** (meaning *very*).
- Este libro es muy interesante.** This book is very interesting.

### Grammar Extra!

For even more emphasis, you can add **-ísimo** (meaning *really, extremely*) to the end of an adjective. Take off the final vowel if the adjective already ends in one. For example, **delgado** (meaning *thin*) becomes **delgadísimo** (meaning *really thin*).

<b>Se ha comprado un coche carísimo.</b>	He's bought himself a really expensive car.
<b>Está delgadísima.</b>	She's looking really thin.

If you add **-ísimo**, you need to take off any other accent. For example, **fácil** (meaning *easy*) becomes **facilísimo** (meaning *extremely easy*) and **rápido** (meaning *fast*) becomes **rapidísimo** (meaning *extremely fast*).

<b>Es facilísimo de hacer.</b>	It's really easy to make.
<b>un coche rapidísimo</b>	an extremely fast car

When the adjective ends in **-co**, **-go** or **-z**, spelling changes are required to keep the same sound. For example, **rico** (meaning *rich*) becomes **riquísimo** (meaning *extremely rich*) and **feroz** (meaning *fierce*) becomes **ferocísimo** (meaning *extremely fierce*).

<b>Se hizo riquísimo.</b>	He became extremely rich.
<b>un tigre ferocísimo</b>	an extremely fierce tiger

- ➔ For more information on *Spelling and Stress*, see pages 196 and 200.

### Key points

- ✓ Comparative adjectives in Spanish are formed by:
  - **más** + adjective + **que**
  - **menos** + adjective + **que**
- ✓ Superlative adjectives in Spanish are formed by:
  - **el/la/los/las** + **más** + adjective
  - **el/la/los/las** + **menos** + adjective
- ✓ There are a few irregular comparative and superlative forms in Spanish.
- ✓ You can use **tan ... como** to say *as ... as*.
- ✓ To make an adjective stronger, use **muy**.



## Demonstrative adjectives

### What is a demonstrative adjective?

A **demonstrative adjective** is one of the words *this, that, these* and *those* used with a noun in English to point out a particular thing or person, for example, *this woman, that dog*.

### 1 Using demonstrative adjectives

- Just as in English, Spanish demonstrative adjectives go **BEFORE** the noun. Like other adjectives in Spanish, they have to change for the feminine and plural forms.

	Masculine	Feminine	Meaning
Singular	<b>este</b>	<b>esta</b>	this
	<b>ese</b>	<b>esa</b>	that ( <i>close by</i> )
	<b>aquel</b>	<b>aquella</b>	that ( <i>further away</i> )
Plural	<b>estos</b>	<b>estas</b>	these
	<b>esos</b>	<b>esas</b>	those ( <i>close by</i> )
	<b>aquellos</b>	<b>aquellas</b>	those ( <i>further away</i> )

- Use **este/esta/estos/estas** (meaning *this/these*) to talk about things and people that are near **you**.

**Este bolígrafo no escribe.** This pen isn't working.  
**Me he comprado estos libros.** I've bought these books.

- Use **ese/esa/esos/esas** and **aquel/aquella/aquellos/aquellas** (meaning *that/those*) to talk about things that are further away.

**Esa revista es muy mala.** That magazine is very bad.  
**¿Conoces a esos señores?** Do you know those gentlemen?  
**No le gusta aquella muñeca.** She doesn't like that doll.  
**Siga usted hasta aquellos árboles.** Carry on until you reach those trees (over there).

### 2 ese or aquel?

- In English we use *that* and *those* to talk about anything that is not close by, but in Spanish you need to be a bit more precise.

- Use **ese/esa/esos/esas**:

- to talk about things and people that are nearer to the person you are talking to than to you

**ese papel en el que escribes** that paper you're writing on  
**¿Por qué te has puesto esas medias?** Why are you wearing those tights?

- to talk about things and people that aren't very far away

**No me gustan esos cuadros.** I don't like those pictures.

- Use **aquel/aquella/aquellos/aquellas** to talk about things that are further away.

**Me gusta más aquella mesa.** I prefer that table (over there).

### Grammar Extra!

You should use **ese/esa/esos/esas** when you are talking about a definite date, month or year.

**¿1999? No me acuerdo de dónde pasamos las vacaciones ese año.** 1999? I can't remember where we went on holiday that year.

You should use **aquel/aquella/aquellos/aquellas** when you are talking about something in the past and not mentioning a definite date.

**aquellas vacaciones que pasamos en Francia** those holidays we had in France

### Key points

- ✓ **this** + noun = **este/esta** + noun
- ✓ **these** + noun = **estos/estas** + noun
- ✓ **that** + noun = **ese/esa** + noun (*when the object is not far away from you or the person you're talking to*)
- ✓ **that** + noun = **aquel/aquella** + noun (*when the object is more distant*)
- ✓ **those** + noun = **esos/esas** + noun (*when the objects are not far away from you or the person you're talking to*)
- ✓ **those** + noun = **aquellos/aquellas** + noun (*when the objects are more distant*)



## Interrogative adjectives

**What is an interrogative adjective?**

An **interrogative adjective** is one of the question words and expressions used with a noun such as *which*, *what*, *how much* and *how many*; for example, *Which shirt are you going to wear?*; *How much time have we got?*

- ▶ In Spanish the interrogative adjectives are **qué** (meaning *which* or *what*) and **cuánto/cuánta/cuántos/cuántas** (meaning *how much/how many*). Note that like all other Spanish question words, **qué** and **cuánto** have accents on them.
- ▶ **¿qué?** (meaning *which?* or *what?*) doesn't change for the feminine and plural forms.

**¿Qué libro te gusta más?** Which book do you like best?

**¿Qué clase de diccionario necesitas?** What kind of dictionary do you need?

**¿Qué instrumentos tocas?** What instruments do you play?

**¿Qué ofertas has recibido?** What offers have you received?

- ▶ **¿cuánto?** means the same as *how much?* in English. It changes to **¿cuánta?** in the feminine form.

**¿Cuánto dinero te queda?** How much money have you got left?

**¿Cuánta lluvia ha caído?** How much rain have we had?

- ❗ Note that with **gente** (meaning *people*), which is a feminine singular noun, **cuánta** must be used.

**¿Cuánta gente ha venido?** How many people came?

- ▶ **¿cuántos?** means the same as *how many?* in English. It changes to **¿cuántas?** in the feminine plural.

**¿Cuántos bolígrafos quieres?** How many pens would you like?

**¿Cuántas personas van a venir?** How many people are coming?

**Típ**

Don't forget to add the opening upside-down question mark in Spanish questions.

**Grammar Extra!**

In English we can say, *Tell me what time it is*, *He asked me how much sugar there was* and *I don't know which dress to choose* to express doubt, report a question, or ask a question in a roundabout or indirect way. In Spanish you can use **qué** and **cuánto/cuánta/cuántos/cuántas** in the same way.

**Dime qué hora es.**

Tell me what time it is.

**Me preguntó cuánto**

He asked me how much sugar

**azúcar había.**

there was.

**No sé qué vestido escoger.**

I don't know which dress to choose.

**No sé a qué hora llegó.**

I don't know what time she arrived.

**Dime cuántas postales**

Tell me how many postcards you'd

**quieres.**

like.



Adjectives used in exclamations

► In Spanish ¡qué...! is often used where we might say *What a ...!* in English.

- ¡Qué lástima!      What a pity!
- ¡Qué sorpresa!      What a surprise!

**Típ**

Don't forget to add the opening upside-down exclamation mark in Spanish exclamations.

**Grammar Extra!**

¡qué...! combines with **tan** or **más** and an adjective in Spanish to mean *What (a)...!* in English.

- ¡Qué día **tan** or **más bonito**!      What a lovely day!
- ¡Qué tiempo **tan** or **más malo**!      What awful weather!
- ¡Qué pasteles **tan** or **más ricos**!      What delicious cakes!

In Spanish **cuánto/cuánta/cuántos/cuántas** can be used to mean *What a lot of ...!* in English.

- ¡Cuánto dinero!      What a lot of money!
- ¡Cuánta gente!      What a lot of people!
- ¡Cuántos autobuses!      What a lot of buses!
- ¡Cuánto tiempo!      What a long time!

Note that with *gente* (meaning people), which is a feminine singular noun, *cuánta* must be used.

► *cuántos?* means the same as *how many?* in English. It changes to *cuántas?* in the feminine plural.

- ¿Cuántas bolígrafos quieres?      How many pens would you like?
- ¿Cuántas personas van a venir?      How many people are coming?

**Típ**

Don't forget to add the opening upside-down question mark in Spanish questions.

Possessive adjectives (1)

What is a possessive adjective?

In English a **possessive adjective** is one of the words *my, your, his, her, its, our* or *their* used with a noun to show that one person or thing belongs to another.

► Like other adjectives in Spanish, possessive adjectives have to change for the feminine and plural forms.

Singular		Plural		Meaning
masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine	
<b>mi</b>	<b>mi</b>	<b>mis</b>	<b>mis</b>	my
<b>tu</b>	<b>tu</b>	<b>tus</b>	<b>tus</b>	your ( <i>belonging to someone you address as tú</i> )
<b>su</b>	<b>su</b>	<b>sus</b>	<b>sus</b>	his; her; its; your ( <i>belonging to someone you address as usted</i> )
<b>nuestro</b>	<b>nuestra</b>	<b>nuestros</b>	<b>nuestras</b>	our
<b>vuestro</b>	<b>vuestra</b>	<b>vuestros</b>	<b>vuestras</b>	your ( <i>belonging to people you address as vosotros/vosotras</i> )
<b>su</b>	<b>su</b>	<b>sus</b>	<b>sus</b>	their; your ( <i>belonging to people you address as ustedes</i> )

⇒ For more information on *Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish*, see page 44.

- ¿Dónde está **tu** hermana?      Where's your sister?
- José ha perdido **su** cartera.      José has lost his wallet.
- ¿Dónde están **nuestros** pasaportes?      Where are our passports?
- ¿Por qué no traéis a **vuestros** hijos?      Why don't you bring your children?
- Mis tíos están vendiendo **su** casa.      My uncle and aunt are selling their house.

**Típ**

Possessive adjectives agree with what they describe **NOT** with the person who owns that thing.

- Pablo ha perdido su bolígrafo.**      Pablo has lost his pen.
- Pablo ha perdido sus bolígrafos.**      Pablo has lost his pens.



**i** Note that possessive adjectives aren't normally used with parts of the body. You usually use the definite article instead.

**Tiene los ojos verdes.** He's got green eyes.

**No puedo mover las piernas.** I can't move my legs.

⇒ For more information on **Articles**, see page 10.

### Tip

As **su** and **sus** can mean *his, her, its, your* or *their*, it can sometimes be a bit confusing. When you need to avoid confusion, you can say the Spanish equivalent of *of him* and so on.

**su casa** → **la casa de él** his house  
(literally: the house of him)

**sus amigos** → **los amigos de usted** your friends  
(literally: the friends of you)

**sus coches** → **los coches de ellos** their cars  
(literally: the cars of them)

**su abrigo** → **el abrigo de ella** her coat  
(literally: the coat of her)

⇒ For more information on **Personal pronouns**, see page 42.

### Key points

- ✓ The Spanish possessive adjectives are:
  - **mi/tu/su/nuestro/vuestro/su** with a masculine singular noun
  - **mi/tu/su/nuestra/vuestra/su** with a feminine singular noun
  - **mis/tus/sus/nuestros/vuestros/sus** with a masculine plural noun
  - **mis/tus/sus/nuestras/vuestras/sus** with a feminine plural noun
- ✓ Possessive adjectives come before the noun they refer to. They agree with what they describe, rather than with the person who owns that thing.
- ✓ Possessive adjectives are not usually used with parts of the body. Use **el/la/los** or **las** as appropriate instead.
- ✓ To avoid confusion, it is sometimes clearer to use **el coche de él/ella/ellas/ellos/usted** and so on rather than **su coche**.

## Possessive adjectives (2)

► In Spanish, there is a second set of possessive adjectives, which mean (*of mine, (of) yours* and so on. Like other adjectives in Spanish, they change in the feminine and plural forms.

Singular		Plural		Meaning
masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine	
<b>mío</b>	<b>mía</b>	<b>míos</b>	<b>mías</b>	mine/of mine
<b>tuyo</b>	<b>tuya</b>	<b>tuyos</b>	<b>tuyas</b>	yours/of yours ( <i>belonging to tú</i> )
<b>suyo</b>	<b>suya</b>	<b>suyos</b>	<b>suyas</b>	his/of his; hers/of hers; of its; yours/of yours ( <i>belonging to usted</i> )
<b>nuestro</b>	<b>nuestra</b>	<b>nuestros</b>	<b>nuestras</b>	ours/of ours
<b>vuestro</b>	<b>vuestra</b>	<b>vuestros</b>	<b>vuestras</b>	yours/of yours ( <i>belonging to vosotros/as</i> )
<b>suyo</b>	<b>suya</b>	<b>suyos</b>	<b>suyas</b>	theirs/of theirs; yours/of yours ( <i>belonging to ustedes</i> )

⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

**un amigo mío** a (male) friend of mine, one of my (male) friends

**una revista tuya** a magazine of yours, one of your magazines

**una tía suya** an aunt of his/hers/theirs/yours, one of his/her/their/your aunts

**una amiga nuestra** a (female) friend of ours, one of our friends

**¿De quién es esta bufanda?** Whose scarf is this? – It's mine.  
– **Es mía.**

**i** Note that unlike the other possessive adjectives, these adjectives go **AFTER** the noun they describe.

**un amigo vuestro** a (male) friend of yours, one of your friends



**Típ**

Possessive adjectives agree with what they describe NOT with the person who owns that thing.

**Estos apuntes son míos.**

These notes are mine.

**Grammar Extra!**

**mío/mía** and so on are also used in exclamations and when addressing someone. In this case they mean the same as *my* in English.

<b>¡Dios mío!</b>	My God!
<b>amor mío</b>	my love
<b>Muy señor mío</b>	Dear Sir
<b>hija mía</b>	my dear daughter

**Indefinite adjectives****What is an indefinite adjective?**

An **indefinite adjective** is one of a small group of adjectives used to talk about people or things in a general way without saying exactly who or what they are, for example, *several, all, every*.

- In English indefinite adjectives do not change, but in Spanish most indefinite adjectives change for the feminine and plural forms.

Singular		Plural		Meaning
masculine	feminine	masculine	feminine	
<b>algún</b>	<b>alguna</b>	<b>algunos</b>	<b>algunas</b>	some; any
<b>cada</b>	<b>cada</b>			each; every
<b>mismo</b>	<b>misma</b>	<b>mismos</b>	<b>mismas</b>	same
<b>mucho</b>	<b>mucha</b>	<b>muchos</b>	<b>muchas</b>	a lot of
<b>otro</b>	<b>otra</b>	<b>otros</b>	<b>otras</b>	another; other
<b>poco</b>	<b>poca</b>	<b>pocos</b>	<b>pocas</b>	little; few
<b>tanto</b>	<b>tanta</b>	<b>tantos</b>	<b>tantas</b>	so much; so many
<b>todo</b>	<b>toda</b>	<b>todos</b>	<b>todas</b>	all; every
		<b>varios</b>	<b>varias</b>	several

<b>algún día</b>	some day
<b>el mismo día</b>	the same day
<b>las mismas películas</b>	the same films
<b>otro coche</b>	another car
<b>mucha gente</b>	a lot of people
<b>otra manzana</b>	another apple
<b>pocos amigos</b>	few friends

- ❓ Note that you can never use **otro** (meaning *other* or *another*) with **un** or **una**.

<b>¿Me das otra manzana?</b>	Will you give me another apple?
<b>¿Tienes otro jersey?</b>	Have you got another jumper?

**Típ**

*Some* and *any* are usually not translated before nouns that you can't count like bread, butter, water.

<b>Hay pan en la mesa.</b>	There's some bread on the table.
<b>¿Quieres café?</b>	Would you like some coffee?
<b>¿Hay leche?</b>	Is there any milk?
<b>No hay mantequilla.</b>	There isn't any butter.



► **todo/toda/todos/todas** (meaning *all* or *every*) can be followed by:

- a definite article (**el, la, los, las**)

**Han estudiado durante toda la noche.** They've been studying all night.

**Vienen todos los días.** They come every day.

- a demonstrative adjective (**este, ese, aquel** and so on)

**Ha llovido toda esta semana.** It has rained all this week.

- a possessive adjective (**mi, tu, su** and so on)

**Pondré en orden todos mis libros.** I'll sort out all my books.

- a place name.

**Lo sabe todo Madrid.** The whole of Madrid knows it.

⇒ For more information on **Articles, Demonstrative adjectives and Possessive adjectives**, see pages 10, 30 and 35.

► As in English, Spanish indefinite adjectives come **BEFORE** the noun they describe.

**las mismas películas** the same films

#### Key points

- ✓ Like other adjectives, Spanish indefinite adjectives (such as **otro** and **todo**) must agree with what they describe.
- ✓ They go before the noun to which they relate.

## PRONOUNS

### What is a pronoun?

A **pronoun** is a word you use instead of a noun, when you do not need or want to name someone or something directly, for example, *it, you, none*.

► There are several different types of pronoun:

- **Personal pronouns** such as *I, you, he, her* and *they*, which are used to refer to you, the person you are talking to, or other people and things. They can be either **subject pronouns** (*I, you, he* and so on) or **object pronouns** (*him, her, them*, and so on).
- **Possessive pronouns** like *mine* and *yours*, which show who someone or something belongs to.
- **Indefinite pronouns** like *someone* or *nothing*, which refer to people or things in a general way without saying exactly who or what they are.
- **Relative pronouns** like *who, which* or *that*, which link two parts of a sentence together.
- **Interrogative pronouns** like *who, what* or *which*, which are used in questions.
- **Demonstrative pronouns** like *this* or *those*, which point things or people out.
- **Reflexive pronouns**, a type of object pronoun that forms part of Spanish reflexive verbs like **lavarse** (meaning *to wash*) or **llamarse** (meaning *to be called*).

⇒ For more information on **Reflexive verbs**, see page 91.

► Pronouns often stand in for a noun to save repeating it.

I finished my homework and gave **it** to my teacher.

Do you remember Jack? I saw **him** at the weekend.

► Word order with personal pronouns is usually different in Spanish and English.



## Personal pronouns: subject

## What is a subject pronoun?

A subject pronoun is a word such as *I, he, she* and *they*, that carries out the action expressed by the verb. Pronouns stand in for nouns when it is clear who or what is being talked about, for example, *My brother isn't here at the moment. He'll be back in an hour.*

## 1 Using subject pronouns

► Here are the Spanish subject pronouns:

Singular	Meaning	Plural	Meaning
<b>yo</b>	I	<b>nosotros</b> (masculine)	we
<b>tú</b>	you	<b>nosotras</b> (feminine)	we
<b>él</b>	he	<b>vosotros</b> (masculine)	you
<b>ella</b>	she	<b>vosotras</b> (feminine)	you
<b>usted (Vd.)</b>	you	<b>ellos</b> (masculine)	they
		<b>ellas</b> (feminine)	they
		<b>ustedes (Vds.)</b>	you

❗ Note that there is an accent on **tú** (you) and **él** (he) so that they are not confused with **tu** (your) and **el** (the).

## Tip

The abbreviations **Vd.** and **Vds.** are often used instead of **usted** and **ustedes**.

► In English we use subject pronouns all the time – *I walk, you eat, they are going*. In Spanish you don't need them if the verb endings and context make it clear who the subject is. For example **hablo español** can only mean *I speak Spanish* since the **-o** ending on the verb is only used with *I*. Similarly, **hablamos francés** can only mean *we speak French* since the **-amos** ending is only used with *we*. So the subject pronouns are not needed in these examples.

**Tengo un hermano.**  
**Tenemos dos coches.**

I've got a brother.  
We've got two cars.

❗ Note that **usted/Vd.** and **ustedes/Vds.** are often used for politeness, even if they are not really needed.

**¿Conoce usted al señor Martín?** Do you know Mr Martín?  
**Pasen ustedes por aquí.** Please come this way.

⇒ For more information on *Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish*, see page 44.

► Spanish subject pronouns are normally only used:

- for emphasis

**¿Y tú qué piensas?** What do you think about it?  
**Ellos sí que llegaron tarde.** They really did arrive late.

- for contrast or clarity

**Yo estudio español pero él estudia francés.** I study Spanish but he studies French.  
**Él lo hizo pero ella no.** He did it but she didn't.

- after **ser** (meaning *to be*)

**Soy yo.** It's me.  
**¿Eres tú?** Is that you?

- in comparisons after **que** and **como**

**Enrique es más alto que yo.** Enrique is taller than I am or than me.  
**Antonio no es tan alto como tú.** Antonio isn't as tall as you (are).

⇒ For more information on *Making comparisons*, see page 26.

- on their own without a verb

**¿Quién dijo eso? – Él.** Who said that? – He did.  
**¿Quién quiere venir? – Yo.** Who wants to come? – I do.

- after certain prepositions

**Es para ella.** It's for her.

⇒ For more information on *Pronouns after prepositions*, see page 54.

❗ Note that *it* used as the subject, and *they* referring to things, are **NEVER** translated into Spanish.

**¿Qué es? – Es una sorpresa.** What is it? – It's a surprise.  
**¿Qué son? – Son abrelatas.** What are they? – They are tin openers.



## 2 Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish

- In English we have only one way of saying *you*. In Spanish, there are several words to choose from. The word you use depends on:
  - whether you are talking to one person or more than one person
  - whether you are talking to a friend or family member, or someone else.
- If you are talking to one person you know well, such as a friend, a young person or a relative, use **tú**.
- If you are talking to one person you do not know so well, such as your teacher, your boss or a stranger, use the polite form, **usted**.
- If you are talking to more than one person you know well, use **vosotros** (or **vosotras**, if you are talking to women only) in Spain. Use **ustedes** instead in Latin America.
- Use **ustedes** if you are talking to more than one person you do not know so well.

### Tip

Remember that adjectives describing **tú** and **usted** should be feminine if you're talking to a woman or girl, while adjectives describing **ustedes** should be feminine plural if you're talking to women or girls only.

## 3 Using the plural subject pronouns

- When you are talking about males only, use **nosotros**, **vosotros** or **ellos**.  
**Nosotros no somos italianos.** We are not Italian.
- When you are talking about females only, use **nosotras**, **vosotras** or **ellas**.  
**Hablé con mis hermanas.** I spoke to my sisters.  
**Ellas estaban de acuerdo conmigo.** They agreed with me.
- When you are talking about both males and females, use **nosotros**, **vosotros** or **ellos**.  
**Ellos sí que llegaron tarde.** They really did arrive late.

### Key points

- ✓ The Spanish subject pronouns are: **yo, tú, él, ella, usted** in the singular, and **nosotros/nosotras, vosotros/vosotras, ellos/ellas, ustedes** in the plural.
- ✓ Don't use the subject pronouns (other than **usted** and **ustedes**) with verbs except for emphasis or clarity.
- ✓ Make sure you choose the correct form of the verb.
- ✓ Do use the subject pronouns:
  - after **ser** (meaning to be)
  - in comparisons after **que** and **como**
  - in one-word answers to questions.
- ✓ Choose the word for *you* carefully. Remember to think about how many people you are talking to and your relationship with them when deciding between **tú, vosotros, vosotras, usted** and **ustedes**.
- ✓ *It* as the subject of the verb, and *they* when it refers to things are **NOT** translated in Spanish.
- ✓ Use masculine plural forms (**nosotros, vosotros, ellos**) for groups made up of men and women.
- ✓ Remember to make any adjectives describing the subject agree.



## Personal pronouns: direct object

**What is a direct object pronoun?**

A **direct object pronoun** is a word such as *me*, *him*, *us* and *them*, which is used instead of the noun to stand in for the person or thing most directly affected by the action expressed by the verb.

**1 Using direct object pronouns**

- Direct object pronouns stand in for nouns when it is clear who or what is being talked about, and save having to repeat the noun.

I've lost my glasses. Have you seen them?

'Have you met Jo?' – 'Yes, I really like her!'

- Here are the Spanish direct object pronouns:

Singular	Meaning	Plural	Meaning
<b>me</b>	me	<b>nos</b>	us
<b>te</b>	you (relating to <b>tú</b> )	<b>os</b>	you (relating to <b>vosotros/vosotras</b> )
<b>lo</b>	him it (masculine) you (relating to <b>usted</b> – masculine)	<b>los</b>	them (masculine) you (relating to <b>ustedes</b> – masculine)
<b>la</b>	her it (feminine) you (relating to <b>usted</b> – feminine)	<b>las</b>	them (feminine) you (relating to <b>ustedes</b> – feminine)

**Te quiero.**

I love you.

**No los toques.**

Don't touch them.

- Note that you cannot use the Spanish direct object pronouns on their own without a verb or after a preposition such as **a** or **de**.

- For more information on **Pronouns after prepositions**, see page 54.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

**2 Word order with direct object pronouns**

- The direct object pronoun usually comes **BEFORE** the verb.

**¿Las ve usted?**

Can you see them?

**¿No me oís?**

Can't you hear me?

**Tu hija no nos conoce.**

Your daughter doesn't know us.

**¿Lo has visto?**

Have you seen it?

- In orders and instructions telling someone **TO DO** something, the pronoun joins onto the end of the verb to form one word.

**Ayúdame.**

Help me.

**Acompáñanos.**

Come with us.

- Note that you will often need to add a written accent to preserve the spoken stress when adding pronouns to the end of verbs.

- For more information on **Stress**, see page 200.

- In orders and instructions telling someone **NOT TO DO** something, the pronoun does **NOT** join onto the end of the verb.

**No los toques.**

Don't touch them.

- If the pronoun is the object of an infinitive (the *to* form of the verb) or a gerund (the *-ing* form of the verb), you always add the pronoun to the end of the verb to form one word, unless the infinitive or gerund follows another verb. Again, you may have to add a written accent to preserve the stress.

**Se fue después de arreglarlo.**

He left after fixing it.

**Practicándolo, aprenderás.**

You'll learn by practising it.

- For more information on **Verbs and Gerunds**, see pages 69 and 125.

- Where an infinitive or gerund follows another verb, you can put the pronoun either at the end of the infinitive or gerund, or before the other verb.

**Vienen a vernos** or

**Nos vienen a ver.**

They are coming to see us.

**Está comiéndolo** or

**Lo está comiendo.**

He's eating it.

- For further information on the **Order of object pronouns**, see page 52.



3 Special use of **lo**

► **lo** is sometimes used to refer back to an idea or information that has already been given. The word *it* is often missed out in English.

- ¿Va a venir María? – No **lo** sé. Is María coming? – I don't know.  
 Habían comido ya pero no nos **lo** dijeron. They had already eaten, but they didn't tell us.  
 Yo conduzco de prisa pero él **lo** hace despacio. I drive fast but he drives slowly.

## Key points

- ✓ The Spanish direct object pronouns are: **me, te, lo, la** in the singular, and **nos, os, los, las** in the plural.
- ✓ The object pronoun usually comes before the verb.
- ✓ Object pronouns are joined to the end of infinitives, gerunds or verbs instructing someone to do something.
- ✓ If an infinitive or gerund follows another verb, you can choose whether to add the object pronoun to the end of the infinitive or gerund or to put it before the first verb.
- ✓ **lo** is sometimes used to refer back to an idea or information that has already been given.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## Personal pronouns: indirect object

## What is an indirect object pronoun?

An **indirect object pronoun** is used instead of a noun to show the person or thing an action is intended to benefit or harm, for example, *me* in *He gave me a book.*; *Can you get me a towel?*; *He wrote to me.*

## 1 Using indirect object pronouns

- It is important to understand the difference between direct and indirect object pronouns in English, as they can have different forms in Spanish.
- You can usually test whether an object is a direct object or an indirect one by asking questions about the action using *what* and *who*:
- an indirect object answers the question *who ... to?* or *who ... for?*, equally *what ... to?* or *what ... for?*

He gave me a book. → *Who did he give the book to?* → **me**  
 (=indirect object pronoun)

Can you get me a towel? → *Who can you get a towel for?* → **me**  
 (=indirect object pronoun)

We got some varnish for it. → *What did you get the varnish for?* → **it**  
 (=indirect object pronoun)
  - if something answers the question *what* or *who*, then it is the direct object and **NOT** the indirect object.
 

He gave me a book. → *What did he give me?* → a book  
 (=direct object)

I saw Mandy. → *Who did you see?* → Mandy  
 (=direct object)

We got some varnish for it. → *What did you get?* → some varnish  
 (=direct object)

Ⓩ Note that a verb won't necessarily have both a direct and an indirect object.

► Here are the Spanish indirect object pronouns:

Singular	Meaning	Plural	Meaning
<b>me</b>	me, to me, for me	<b>nos</b>	us, to us, for us
<b>te</b>	you, to you, for you (relating to <b>tú</b> )	<b>os</b>	you, to you, for you (relating to <b>vosotros/vosotras</b> )
<b>le</b>	him, to him, for him her, to her, for her it, to it, for it you, to you, for you (relating to <b>usted</b> )	<b>les</b>	them, to them, for them you, to you, for you (relating to <b>ustedes</b> )



- The pronouns shown in the table are used instead of using the preposition **a** with a noun.

**Estoy escribiendo a Teresa.** I am writing to Teresa. →

**Le estoy escribiendo.** I am writing to her.

**Compra un regalo a los niños.** Buy the children a present. →

**Comprales un regalo.** Buy them a present.

- Some Spanish verbs like **mirar** (meaning *to look at*), **esperar** (meaning *to wait for*) and **buscar** (meaning *to look for*) take a direct object, because the Spanish construction is different from the English.

### Grammar Extra!

You should usually use direct object pronouns rather than indirect object pronouns when replacing personal **a** + noun.

**Vi a Teresa.** → **La vi.** I saw Teresa. → I saw her.

- ⇒ For more information on **Personal a**, see page 182.

## 2 Word order with indirect object pronouns

- The indirect object pronoun usually comes **BEFORE** the verb.

**Sofía os ha escrito.** Sophie has written to you.

**¿Os ha escrito Sofía?** Has Sofía written to you?

**Carlos no nos habla.** Carlos doesn't speak to us.

**¿Qué te pedían?** What were they asking you for?

- In orders and instructions telling someone **TO DO** something, the pronoun goes on the end of the verb to form one word.

**Respóndeme.** Answer me.

**Dime la respuesta.** Tell me the answer.

- ❗ Note that you will often need to add a written accent to preserve the spoken stress.

- ⇒ For more information on **Stress**, see page 200.

- In orders and instructions telling someone **NOT TO DO** something, the pronoun does not join onto the end of the verb.

**No me digas la respuesta.** Don't tell me the answer.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- If the pronoun is the object of an infinitive (the *to* form of the verb) or a gerund (the *-ing* form of the verb), you always add the pronoun to the end of the verb to form one word, unless the infinitive or gerund follows another verb. Again, you may have to add a written accent to preserve the stress.

**Eso de darle tu dirección no fue muy prudente.**

It wasn't very wise to give him your address.

**Gritándole tanto lo vas a asustar.**

You'll frighten him by shouting at him like that.

- Where an infinitive or gerund follows another verb, you can put the pronoun either at the end of the infinitive or gerund, or before the other verb.

**Quiero decirte algo.** or

I want to tell you something.

**Te quiero decir algo.**

**Estoy escribiéndole.** or

I am writing to him/her.

**Le estoy escribiendo.**

- ⇒ For further information on the **Order of object pronouns**, see page 52.

### Key points

- ✓ The Spanish indirect object pronouns are: **me, te, le** in the singular, and **nos, os, les** in the plural.
- ✓ They can replace the preposition **a** (meaning *to*) + noun.
- ✓ Like the direct object pronoun, the indirect object pronoun usually comes before the verb.
- ✓ Object pronouns are joined to the end of infinitives, gerunds or verbs instructing someone to do something.
- ✓ If an infinitive or gerund follows another verb, you can choose whether to add the object pronoun to the end of the infinitive or gerund or to put it before the first verb.



## Order of object pronouns

- Two object pronouns are often used together in the same sentence; for example: *he gave me them* or *he gave them to me*. In Spanish, you should always put the indirect object pronoun **BEFORE** the direct object pronoun.

Indirect	BEFORE	Direct
me		lo
te		la
nos		los
os		las

<b>Ana <u>os lo</u> mandará mañana.</b>	Ana will send it to you tomorrow.
<b>¿<u>Te los</u> ha enseñado mi hermana?</b>	Has my sister shown them to you?
<b>No <u>me lo</u> digas.</b>	Don't tell me (that).
<b>Todos estaban <u>pidiéndotelo</u>.</b>	They were all asking you for it.
<b>No quiere <u>prestárnosla</u>.</b>	He won't lend it to us.

- You have to use **se** instead of **le** (*to him, to her, to you*) and **les** (*to them, to you*), when you are using the object pronouns **lo, la, los, or las**.

<b>Se lo di ayer.</b>	I gave it to him/her/you/them yesterday.
<b>Se las enviaré.</b>	I'll send them to him/her/you/them.

## Key points

- ✓ When combining two object pronouns, put the indirect object pronoun before the direct object pronoun.
- ✓ Use **se** as the indirect object pronoun rather than **le** or **les** when there is more than one object pronoun.

## Further information on object pronouns

- The object pronoun **le** can mean (*to*) *him*, (*to*) *her* and (*to*) *you*; **les** can mean (*to*) *them* and (*to*) *you*, and **se** can mean all of these things, which could lead to some confusion.
- To make it clear which one is meant, **a él** (meaning *to him*), **a ella** (meaning *to her*), **a usted** (meaning *to you*) and so on can be added to the phrase.

**A ella le escriben mucho.** They write to her often.

**A ellos se lo van a mandar pronto.** They will be sending it to them soon.

- When a noun object comes before the verb, the corresponding object pronoun must be used too.

**A tu hermano lo conozco bien.** I know your brother well.  
(literally: *Your brother I know him well.*)

**A María la vemos algunas veces.** We sometimes see María.  
(literally: *María we see her sometimes.*)

- Indirect object pronouns are often used in constructions with the definite article with parts of the body or items of clothing to show who they belong to. In English, we'd use a possessive adjective.

**La chaqueta le estaba ancha.** His jacket was too loose.

**Me duele el tobillo.** My ankle's sore.

- ⇨ For more information on **The definite article and Possessive adjectives**, see pages 11, 35 and 37.

- Indirect object pronouns can also be used in certain common phrases which use reflexive verbs.

**Se me ha perdido el bolígrafo.** I have lost my pen.

- ⇨ For more information on **Reflexive verbs**, see page 91.

- ❗ Note that in Spain, you will often hear **le** and **les** used instead of **lo** and **los** as direct object pronouns when referring to men and boys. It is probably better not to copy this practice since it is considered incorrect in some varieties of Spanish, particularly Latin American ones.



## Pronouns after prepositions

- In English, we use *me*, *you*, *him* and so on after a preposition, for example, *he came towards me*; *it's for you*; *books by him*. In Spanish, there is a special set of pronouns which are used after prepositions.
- The pronouns used after a preposition in Spanish are the same as the subject pronouns, except for the forms **mí** (meaning *me*) **ti** (meaning *you*), and **sí** (meaning *himself, herself, yourself, themselves, yourselves*).

Singular	Meaning	Plural	Meaning
<b>mí</b>	me	<b>nosotros</b>	us ( <i>masculine</i> )
<b>ti</b>	you	<b>nosotras</b>	us ( <i>feminine</i> )
<b>él</b>	him	<b>vosotros</b>	you ( <i>masculine</i> )
<b>ella</b>	her	<b>vosotras</b>	you ( <i>feminine</i> )
<b>usted (Vd.)</b>	you	<b>ellos</b>	them ( <i>masculine</i> )
<b>sí</b>	himself herself yourself	<b>ellas</b>	them ( <i>feminine</i> )
		<b>ustedes (Vds.)</b>	you
		<b>sí</b>	themselves yourselves

**Pienso en ti.**

**¿Son para mí?**

**No he sabido nada de él.**

**Es para ella.**

**Iban hacia ellos.**

**Volveréis sin nosotros.**

**Volaban sobre vosotros.**

I think about you.

Are they for me?

I haven't heard from him.

It's for her.

They were going towards them.

You'll come back without us.

They were flying above you.

- 7 Note that **mí**, **sí** and **él** each have an accent, to distinguish them from **mi** (meaning *my*), **si** (meaning *if*), and **el** (meaning *the*), but **ti** does not have an accent.

- These pronouns are often used for emphasis.

**¿A ti no te escriben?**

**Me lo manda a mí, no a ti.**

Don't they write to you?

She's sending it to me, not to you.

- **con** (meaning *with*) combines with **mí**, **ti** and **sí** to form:

- **conmigo** with me

**Ven conmigo.**

Come with me.

- **contigo** with you

**Me gusta estar contigo.**

I like being with you.

- **consigo** with himself/herself/yourself/themselves/yourselves  
**Lo trajeron consigo.** They brought it with them.
- **entre**, **hasta**, **salvo**, **menos** and **según** are always used with the **subject pronouns** (**yo** and **tú**), rather than with the object pronouns (**mi** and **ti**).
- **entre** between, among  
**entre tú y yo** between you and me
- **hasta** even, including  
**Hasta yo puedo hacerlo.** Even I can do it.
- **menos** except  
**todos menos yo** everybody except me
- **salvo** except  
**todos salvo yo** everyone except me
- **según** according to  
**según tú** according to you

➔ For more information on **Subject pronouns**, see page 42.

### Key points

- ✓ Most prepositions are followed by the forms: **mí**, **ti**, **sí** and so on.
- ✓ **con** combines with **mí**, **ti** and **sí** to form **conmigo**, **contigo** and **consigo**.
- ✓ **entre**, **hasta**, **menos**, **salvo** and **según** are followed by the subject pronouns **yo** and **tú**.



## Possessive pronouns

### What is a possessive pronoun?

A **possessive pronoun** is one of the words *mine, yours, hers, his, ours* or *theirs*, which are used instead of a noun to show that one person or thing belongs to another, for example, *Ask Carole if this pen is hers.*; *Mine's the blue one.*

► Here are the Spanish possessive pronouns:

Masculine singular	Feminine singular	Masculine plural	Feminine plural	Meaning
el mío	la mía	los míos	las mías	mine
el tuyo	la tuya	los tuyos	las tuyas	yours ( <i>belonging to tú</i> )
el suyo	la suya	los suyos	las suyas	his; hers; its; yours ( <i>belonging to usted</i> )
el nuestro	la nuestra	los nuestros	las nuestras	ours
el vuestro	la vuestra	los vuestros	las vuestras	yours ( <i>belonging to vosotros/vosotras</i> )
el suyo	la suya	los suyos	las suyas	theirs; yours ( <i>belonging to ustedes</i> )

⇒ For more information on *Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish*, see page 44.

**Pregunta a Cristina si este bolígrafo es el suyo.**

• Ask Cristina if this pen is hers.

**¿Qué equipo ha ganado, el suyo o el nuestro?**

Which team won – theirs or ours?

**Mi perro es más joven que el tuyo.**

My dog is younger than yours.

**Daniel pensó que esos libros eran los suyos.**

Daniel thought those books were his.

**Si no tienes lápices, te prestaré los míos.**

If you haven't got any pencils, I'll lend you mine.

**Las habitaciones son más pequeñas que las vuestras.**

The rooms are smaller than yours.

### Típ

In Spanish, possessive pronouns agree with what they describe, **NOT** with the person who owns that thing. For example, **el suyo** can mean *his, hers, yours* or *theirs*, but can only be used to replace a masculine singular noun.

7 Note that the prepositions **a** and **de** combine with the article **el** to form **al** and **del**, for example, **a + el mío** becomes **al mío**, and **de + el mío** becomes **del mío**.

**Prefiero tu coche al mío.**

I prefer your car to mine.

**Su coche se parece al vuestro.**

His/Her/Their car looks like yours.

**Mi piso está encima del tuyo.**

My flat is above yours.

**Su colegio está cerca del nuestro.**

His/Her/Your/Their school is near ours.

► Instead of **el suyo/la suya/los suyos/las suyas**, it is sometimes clearer to say **el/la/los/las de usted, el/la/los/las de ustedes, el/la/los/las de ellos** and so on. You choose between **el/la/los/las** to agree with the noun referred to.

**mi libro y el de usted**

my book and yours

► **el/la/los/las de** can also be used with a name or other noun referring to somebody.

**Juan tiene un coche bonito pero yo prefiero el de Ana.**

Juan's got a nice car, but I prefer Ana's.

**Ellos tienen una casa bonita pero yo prefiero la del médico.**

They've got a nice house but I prefer the doctor's.

### Key points

- ✓ The Spanish possessive pronouns are **el mío, el tuyo, el suyo, el nuestro, el vuestro** and **el suyo** when they stand in for a masculine noun. If they stand in for a feminine or a plural noun, their forms change accordingly.
- ✓ In Spanish, the pronoun you choose has to agree with the noun it replaces, and **not** with the person who owns that thing.
- ✓ **el/la/los/las de** are used with a noun or pronoun to mean the *one(s) belonging to ...*



## Indefinite pronouns

## What is an indefinite pronoun?

An **indefinite pronoun** is one of a small group of pronouns such as *everything*, *nobody* and *something* which are used to refer to people or things in a general way without saying exactly who or what they are.

► Here are the most common Spanish indefinite pronouns:

- **algo** something, anything

**Tengo algo para ti.**

I have something for you.

**¿Viste algo?**

Did you see anything?

- **alguien** somebody, anybody

**Alguien me lo ha dicho.**

Somebody told me.

**¿Has visto a alguien?**

Have you seen anybody?

## Tip

Don't forget to use personal **a** before indefinite pronouns referring to people when they are the object of a verb.

**¿Viste a alguien?**

Did you see anybody?

**No vi a nadie.**

I didn't see anybody.

⇒ For more information on **Personal a**, see page 182.

- **alguno/alguna/algunos/algunas** some, a few  
**Algunos de los niños ya saben leer.** Some of the children can already read.
- **cada uno/una** each (one), everybody  
**Le dio una manzana a cada uno.** She gave each one an apple.  
**¡Cada uno a su casa!** Everybody home!
- **cualquiera** anybody; any  
**Cualquiera puede hacerlo.** Anybody can do it.  
**Cualquiera de las explicaciones vale.** Any of the explanations is valid.
- **mucho/mucha/muchos/muchas** much; many  
**Muchas de las casas no tenían jardín.** Many of the houses didn't have a garden.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- **nada** nothing, anything  
**¿Qué tienes en la mano?** What have you got in your hand?  
– **Nada.** – Nothing.  
**No dijo nada.** He didn't say anything.
- **nadie** nobody, anybody  
**¿A quién ves? – A nadie.** Who can you see? – Nobody.  
**No quiere ver a nadie.** He doesn't want to see anybody.

## Tip

Don't forget to use personal **a** before indefinite pronouns referring to people when they are the object of a verb.

**¿Viste a alguien?**

Did you see anybody?

**No vi a nadie.**

I didn't see anybody.

⇒ For more information on **Personal a**, see page 182.

- **ninguno/ninguna** none, any  
**¿Cuántas tienes? – Ninguna.** How many have you got? – None.  
**No me queda ninguno.** I haven't any left or I have none left.
  - **otro/otra/otros/otras** another one; others  
**No me gusta este modelo.** I don't like this model. Have you got another?  
**¿Tienes otro?**
- ⚠ Note that you can never put **un** or **una** before **otro** or **otra**.
- **poco/poca/pocos/pocas** little; few  
**sólo unos pocos** only a few
  - **tanto/tanta/tantos/tantas** so much; so many  
**¿Se oía mucho ruido? – No tanto.** Was there a lot of noise? – Not so much.
  - **todo/toda/todos/todas** all; everything  
**Lo ha estropeado todo.** He has spoiled everything.  
**Todo va bien.** It's all going well.
  - **uno ... el otro/una ... la otra** (the) one ... the other  
**Uno dijo que sí y el otro que no.** One said yes while the other said no.



- **unos ... los otros/unas ... las otras** some ... the others  
**Unos cuestan 30 euros, los otros 40 euros.** Some cost 30 euros, the others 40 euros.
- **varios/varias** several  
**Varios de ellos me gustan mucho.** I like several of them very much.

**Tip**

Don't forget to make those pronouns that have feminine and plural forms agree with the noun they refer to.

**He perdido mi goma pero tengo otra.** I've lost my rubber but I've got another one.

- ⓘ Note that **algo**, **alguien** and **alguno** can **NEVER** be used after a negative such as **no**. Instead you must use the appropriate negative pronouns, **nada**, **nadie**, **ninguno**.

**No veo a nadie.** I can't see anybody.

**No tengo nada que hacer.** I haven't got anything to do.

- You use **nada**, **nadie** and **ninguno** on their own without **no** to answer questions.

**¿Qué pasa? – Nada.** What's happening? – Nothing.

**¿Quién habló? – Nadie.** Who spoke? – Nobody.

**¿Cuántos quedan? – Ninguno.** How many are there left? – None.

- You also use **nada**, **nadie** and **ninguno** on their own without **no** when they come before a verb.

**Nada lo asusta.** Nothing frightens him.

**Nadie habló.** Nobody spoke.

**Ninguno de mis amigos quiso venir.** None of my friends wanted to come.

- ➔ For more information on **Negatives**, see page 157.

**Key points**

- ✓ Where indefinite pronouns have alternative endings, they must agree with the noun they refer to.
- ✓ *Anything* is usually translated by **algo** in questions and by **nada** in sentences containing **no**.
- ✓ *Anybody* is usually translated by **alguien** in questions and by **nadie** in sentences containing **no**.
- ✓ When **nada**, **nadie** or **ninguno** come after the verb, remember to put **no** before it. When they come before the verb, don't use **no**.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

**Relative pronouns****What is a relative pronoun?**

In English, a **relative pronoun** is one of the words *who*, *which* and *that* (and the more formal *whom*) which can be used to introduce information that makes it clear which person or thing is being talked about, for example, *The man who has just come in is Ann's boyfriend.*; *The vase that you broke was quite valuable.*

Relative pronouns can also introduce further information about someone or something, for example, *Peter, who is a brilliant painter, wants to study art.*; *Jane's house, which was built in 1890, needs a lot of repairs.*

**1 Relative pronouns referring to people**

- In English, we use the relative pronouns *who*, *whom* and *that* to talk about people. In Spanish, **que** is used.

**el hombre que vino ayer** the man who came yesterday

**Mi hermano, que tiene veinte años, es mecánico.** My brother, who is twenty, is a mechanic.

**el hombre que vi en la calle** the man (that) I saw in the street

**Tip**

In English we often miss out the relative pronouns *who*, *whom* and *that*. For example, we can say both *the friends that I see most*, or *the friends I see most*.

In Spanish, you can **NEVER** miss out **que** in this way.

- When the relative pronoun is used with a **preposition**, use **el/la/los/las que** or **quien/quienes** which must agree with the noun it replaces; **el que** changes for the feminine and plural forms, **quien** changes only in the plural.

- Here are the Spanish relative pronouns referring to people that are used after a preposition:

	Masculine	Feminine	Meaning
Singular	<b>el que</b> <b>quien</b>	<b>la que</b> <b>quien</b>	who, that, whom
Plural	<b>los que</b> <b>quienes</b>	<b>las que</b> <b>quienes</b>	who, that, whom



**las mujeres con las que** or **con quienes estaba hablando** the women (that) she was talking to

**La chica de la que** or **de quien te hablé** llega mañana. The girl (that) I told you about is coming tomorrow.

**los niños de los que** or **de quienes se ocupa usted** the children (that) you look after

- 7** Note that when **de** is used with **el que**, they combine to become **del que**. When **a** is used with **el que**, they combine to become **al que**.

**el chico del que te hablé** the boy I told you about

**Vive con un hombre al que adora.** She lives with a man she adores.

### Típ

In English, we often put prepositions at the end of the sentence, for example, *the man she was talking to*. In Spanish, you can **never** put a preposition at the end of a sentence.

**el hombre con el que** or **con quien estaba hablando** the man she was talking to

↪ For more information on **Prepositions**, see page 178.

## 2 Relative pronouns referring to things

- In English, we use the relative pronouns *which* and *that* to talk about things. In Spanish, **que** is used.

**la novela que ganó el premio** the novel that or which won the prize

**el coche que compré** the car (that or which) I bought

### Típ

In English, we often miss out the relative pronouns *which* and *that*. For example, we can say both *the house which we want to buy*, or *the house we want to buy*.

In Spanish, you can **NEVER** miss out **que** in this way.

- When the relative pronoun is used with a preposition, use **el/la/los/las que**, which must agree with the noun it replaces. Here are the Spanish relative pronouns referring to things that are used after a preposition:

	Masculine	Feminine	Meaning
Singular	<b>el que</b>	<b>la que</b>	which, that
Plural	<b>los que</b>	<b>las que</b>	which, that

**la tienda a la que siempre va** the shop (that or which) she always goes to

**los temas de los que habla** the subjects he talks about

- 7** Note that when **de** is used with **el que**, they combine to become **del que**. When **a** is used with **el que**, they combine to become **al que**.

**el programa del que te hablé** the programme I told you about

**el banco al que fuiste** the bank you went to

- The neuter form **lo que** is used when referring to the whole of the previous part of the sentence.

**Todo estaba en silencio, lo que me pareció raro.** All was silent, which I thought was odd.

↪ For more information on **lo que**, see page 17.

### Típ

In English, we often put prepositions at the end of the sentence, for example, *the shop she always goes to*. In Spanish, you can **never** put a preposition at the end of a sentence.

**la tienda a la que siempre va** the shop she always goes to  
**la película de la que te hablaba** the film I was telling you about



## Grammar Extra!

In English we can use *whose* to show possession, for example, *the woman whose son is ill*. In Spanish you use **cuyo/cuya/cuyos/cuyas**; **cuyo** is actually an adjective and must agree with the noun it describes **NOT** with the person who owns that thing.

**La mujer, cuyo nombre era Antonia,** The woman, whose name was Antonia, **estaba jubilada.** was retired.

**el señor en cuya casa me alojé** the gentleman whose house I stayed in

In your reading, you may come across the forms **el cual/la cual/los cuales/las cuales** which are a more formal alternative to **el que/la que/los que/las que** after a preposition.

**las mujeres con las cuales estaba hablando** the women (that or who) she was talking to

**la ventana desde la cual nos observaban** the window from which they were watching us

**el cual/la cual/los cuales/las cuales** are also useful to make it clear who you are talking about in other cases where the pronoun does not immediately follow the person or thing it refers to.

**El padre de Elena, el cual tiene mucho dinero, es ...** Elena's father, who has a lot of money, is ...

3 Other uses of **el que, la que, los que, las que**

► You can use **el que, la que, los que, las que** to mean *the one(s)* (*who/which*) or *those who*.

**Esa película es la que quiero ver.** That film is the one I want to see.  
**los que quieren irse** those who want to leave

## Key points

- ✓ **que** can refer to both people and things in Spanish.
- ✓ In English we often miss out the relative pronouns *who, which* and *that*, but in Spanish you can never miss out **que**.
- ✓ After a preposition you use **el que/la que/los que/las que** or **quien/quienes** if you are referring to people; you use **el que/la que/los que/las que** if you are referring to things. **el que** and **quien** agree with the nouns they replace.
- ✓ **a + el que** → **al que**  
**de + el que** → **del que**
- ✓ Never put the preposition at the end of the sentence in Spanish.
- ✓ **el que/la que/los que** and **las que** are also used to mean *the one(s) who/which* or *those who*.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## Interrogative pronouns

## What is an interrogative pronoun?

In English, an **interrogative pronoun** is one of the words *who, which, whose, whom*, and *what* when they are used without a noun to ask questions.

► These are the interrogative pronouns in Spanish:

Singular	Plural	Meaning
¿qué?	¿qué?	what?
¿cuál?	¿cuáles?	which? which one(s)?; what?
¿quién?	¿quiénes?	who? ( <i>as subject or after a preposition</i> )
¿cuánto?/¿cuánta?	¿cuántos?/¿cuántas?	how much? how many?

7 Note that question words have an accent on them in Spanish.

## 1 ¿qué?

► **¿qué?** is the equivalent of *what?* in English.

**¿Qué están haciendo?** What are they doing?  
**¿Qué dices?** What are you saying?  
**¿Para qué lo quieres?** What do you want it for?

► You can use **¿por qué?** in the same way as *why?* in English.

**¿Por qué no vienes?** Why don't you come?

## 2 ¿cuál?, ¿cuáles?

► **¿cuál?** and **¿cuáles?** are usually the equivalent of *which?* in English and are used when there is a choice between two or more things.

**¿Cuál de estos vestidos te gusta más?** Which of these dresses do you like best?  
**¿Cuáles quieres?** Which (ones) do you want?

7 Note that you don't use **cuál** before a noun; use **qué** instead.

**¿Qué libro es más interesante?** Which book is more interesting?

↪ For more information on **Interrogative adjectives**, see page 32.



3 **¿qué es or cuál es?**

- You should only use **¿qué es ...?** (meaning *what is...?*) and **¿qué son ...?** (meaning *what are...?*) when you are asking someone to define, explain or classify something.

**¿Qué es esto?** What is this?

**¿Qué son los genes?** What are genes?

- Use **¿cuál es ...?** and **¿cuáles son...?** (also meaning *what is ...?* and *what are ...?*) when you want someone to specify a particular detail, number, name and so on.

**¿Cuál es la capital de España?** What is the capital of Spain?

**¿Cuál es tu consejo?** What's your advice?

4 **¿quién?**

- **¿quién?** and **¿quiénes?** are the equivalent of *who?* in English when it is the subject of the verb or when used with a preposition.

**¿Quién ganó la carrera?** Who won the race?

**¿Con quiénes los viste?** Who did you see them with?

**¿A quién se lo diste?** Who did you give it to?

- **¿a quién?** and **¿a quiénes?** are the equivalent of *who(m)?* when it is the object of the verb.

**¿A quién viste?** Who did you see? or Whom did you see?

**¿A quiénes ayudaste?** Who did you help? or Whom did you help?

- **¿de quién?** and **¿de quiénes?** are the equivalent of *whose?* in English.

**¿De quién es este libro?** Whose is this book? or Whose books are these?

**¿De quiénes son estos coches?** Whose are these cars? or Whose cars are these?

5 **¿cuánto?, ¿cuántos?**

- **¿cuánto?** (*masculine*) and **¿cuánta?** (*feminine*) are the equivalent of *how much* in English. **¿cuántos?** (*masculine plural*) and **¿cuántas?** (*feminine plural*) are the equivalent of *how many?*

**¿Cuánto es?** How much is it?

**¿Cuántos tienes?** How many have you got?

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## Demonstrative pronouns

## What is a demonstrative pronoun?

In English a **demonstrative pronoun** is one of the words *this*, *that*, *these*, and *those* used instead of a noun to point people or things out, for example, *That looks fun*.

## 1 Using demonstrative pronouns

- These are the demonstrative pronouns in Spanish:

	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter	Meaning
Singular	<b>éste</b>	<b>ésta</b>	<b>esto</b>	this, this one
	<b>ése</b>	<b>ésa</b>	<b>eso</b>	that, that one ( <i>close by</i> )
	<b>aquéel</b>	<b>aquélla</b>	<b>aquello</b>	that, that one ( <i>further away</i> )
Plural	<b>éstos</b>	<b>éstas</b>		these, these ones
	<b>esos</b>	<b>esas</b>		those, those ones ( <i>close by</i> )
	<b>aquéllos</b>	<b>aquéllas</b>		those, those ones ( <i>further away</i> )

- The demonstrative pronouns in Spanish have to agree with the noun that they are replacing.

**¿Qué abrigo te gusta más? – Éste de aquí.**

Which coat do you like best? – This one here.

**Aquella casa era más grande que ésta.**

That house was bigger than this one.

**estos libros y aquéllos**

these books and those (over there)

**Quiero estas sandalias y esas.**

I'd like these sandals and those ones.

2 **¿ése or aquél?**

- In English we use *that* and *those* to talk about anything that is not close by. In Spanish, you need to be a bit more precise.

- Use **ése/ésa** and so on to indicate things and people that are nearer to the person you're talking to than to you.

**Me gusta más ése que tienes en la mano.**

I prefer the one you've got in your hand.

- Use **ése/ésa** and so on to indicate things and people that aren't very far away.

**Si quieres ver una película, podemos ir a ésa que dijiste.**

If you want to see a film, we can go and see that one you mentioned.



- Use **aquél/aquella** and so on to talk about things that are further away.

**Aquella al fondo de la calle es mi casa.**

My house is that one at the end of the street.

- ❗ Note that the masculine and feminine forms of demonstrative **pronouns** usually have an accent, to distinguish them from demonstrative **adjectives**. Compare:

**este bolígrafo** this pen  
**esa mesa** that table

**éste** this one  
**ése** that one

- ⇒ For more information on **Demonstrative adjectives**, see page 30.

- The neuter forms (**esto, eso, aquello**) are used to talk about an object you don't recognize or about an idea or statement.

**¿Qué es eso que llevas en la mano?**

What's that you've got in your hand?

**No puedo creer que esto me esté pasando a mí.**

I can't believe this is really happening to me.

**Aquello sí que me gustó.**

I really did like that.

- ❗ Note that the neuter forms of demonstrative pronouns do **NOT** have an accent.

### Key points

- ✓ Spanish demonstrative pronouns agree with the noun they are replacing.
- ✓ Masculine and feminine demonstrative pronouns usually have an accent on them in both the singular and the plural.
- ✓ In Spanish you have to choose the correct pronoun to emphasize the difference between something that is close to you and something that is further away:
  - **éste/ésta/éstos** and **éstas** (meaning *this/these*) are used to indicate things and people that are very close.
  - **ése/ésa/ésos** and **ésas** (meaning *that/those*) are used to indicate things and people that are near the person you are talking to or that aren't too far away.
  - **aquél/aquella/aquéllos/aquéllas** (meaning *that/those*) are used to indicate things and people that are further away.
- ✓ The neuter pronouns (**esto, eso** and **aquello**) are used to talk about things you don't recognize or to refer to statements or ideas. They don't have an accent.

## VERBS

### What is a verb?

A **verb** is a 'doing' word which describes what someone or something does, what someone or something is, or what happens to them, for example, *be, sing, live*.

### Overview of verbs

- Verbs are frequently used with a noun, with somebody's name or, particularly in English, with a pronoun such as *I, you* or *she*. They can relate to the present, the past and the future; this is called their **tense**.

- ⇒ For more information on **Nouns and Pronouns**, see pages 1 and 41.

- Verbs are either:

- **regular**; their forms follow the normal rules
- **irregular**; their forms do not follow normal rules

- Almost all verbs have a form called the **infinitive**. This is a base form of the verb (for example, *walk, see, hear*) that hasn't had any endings added to it and doesn't relate to any particular tense. In English, the infinitive is usually shown with *to*, as in *to speak, to eat, to live*.

- In Spanish, the infinitive is always made up of just one word (never two as in *to speak* in English) and ends in **-ar, -er** or **-ir**: for example, **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*). All Spanish verbs belong to one of these three types, which are called **conjugations**. We will look at each of these three conjugations in turn on the next few pages.

- Regular English verbs have other forms apart from the infinitive: a form ending in **-s** (*walks*), a form ending in **-ing** (*walking*), and a form ending in **-ed** (*walked*).

- Spanish verbs have many more forms than this, which are made up of endings added to a **stem**. The stem of a verb can usually be worked out from the infinitive.



- Spanish verb endings change depending on who or what is doing the action and on when the action takes place. In fact, the ending is very often the only thing that shows you **who** is doing the action, as the Spanish equivalents of *I, you, he* and so on (**yo, tú, él** and so on) are not used very much. So, both **hablo** on its own and **yo hablo** mean *I speak*. Sometimes there is a name or a noun in the sentence to make it clear who is doing the action.

**José habla español.**

**José** speaks Spanish.

**El profesor habla español.**

**The teacher** speaks Spanish.

- ⇒ For more information on **Subject pronouns**, see page 42.
- Spanish verb forms also change depending on whether you are talking about the present, past or future, so (**yo**) **hablaré** means *I will speak* while (**yo**) **hablé** means *I spoke*.
- Some verbs in Spanish do not follow the usual patterns. These **irregular verbs** include some very common and important verbs like **ir** (meaning *to go*), **ser** and **estar** (meaning *to be*) and **hacer** (meaning *to do* or *to make*). Other verbs are only slightly irregular, changing their stems in certain tenses.
- ⇒ For **Verb Tables**, see supplement.

### Key points

- ✓ Spanish verbs have different forms depending on who or what is doing the action and on the tense.
- ✓ Spanish verb forms are made up of a stem and an ending. The stem is usually based on the infinitive of the verb. The ending depends on who or what is doing the action and on when the action takes place.
- ✓ Regular verbs follow the standard patterns for **-ar**, **-er** and **-ir** verbs. Irregular verbs do not.

## The present tenses

### What are the present tenses?

The **present tenses** are the verb forms that are used to talk about what is true at the moment, what happens regularly and what is happening now; for example, *I'm a student; I travel to college by train; I'm studying languages*.

- In English, there are two tenses you can use to talk about the present:
- the **present simple** tense
    - I **live** here.
    - They **get up** early.
  - the **present continuous** tense
    - He **is eating** an apple.
    - You **aren't working** very hard.
- In Spanish, there is also a **present simple** and a **present continuous** tense. As in English, the **present simple** in Spanish is used to talk about:
- things that are generally true
    - En invierno hace frío.** It's cold in winter.
  - things that are true at the moment
    - Carlos no come carne.** Carlos **doesn't** eat meat.
  - things that happen at intervals
    - A menudo vamos al cine.** We often **go** to the cinema.
- The **present continuous** tense in Spanish is used to talk about things that are happening right now or at the time of writing:
- **Marta está viendo la televisión.** Marta **is watching** television.
- However, there are times where the use of the present tenses in the two languages is not exactly the same.
- ⇒ For more information on the use of the **Present tenses**, see pages 79 and 84.



## The present simple tense

### 1 Forming the present simple tense of regular -ar verbs

- ▶ If the infinitive of the Spanish verb ends in **-ar**, it means that the verb belongs to the **first conjugation**, for example, **hablar**, **lavar**, **llamar**.
- ▶ To know which form of the verb to use in Spanish, you need to work out what the stem of the verb is and then add the correct ending. The stem of regular **-ar** verbs in the present simple tense is formed by taking the **infinitive** and chopping off **-ar**.

Infinitive	Stem (without -ar)
<b>hablar</b> (to speak)	<b>habl-</b>
<b>lavar</b> (to wash)	<b>lav-</b>

- ▶ Now you know how to find the stem of a verb you can add the correct ending. The one you choose will depend on who or what is doing the action.

ⓘ Note that as the ending generally makes it clear who is doing the action, you usually don't need to add a subject pronoun such as **yo** (meaning *I*), **tú** (meaning *you*) as well.

➡ For more information on **Subject pronouns**, see page 42.

- ▶ Here are the present simple endings for regular **-ar** verbs:

Present simple endings	Present simple of <b>hablar</b>	Meaning: <b>to speak</b>
<b>-o</b>	<b>(yo) hablo</b>	I speak
<b>-as</b>	<b>(tú) hablas</b>	you speak
<b>-a</b>	<b>(él/ella) habla</b>	he/she/it speaks
	<b>(usted) habla</b>	you speak
<b>-amos</b>	<b>(nosotros/nosotras) hablamos</b>	we speak
<b>-áis</b>	<b>(vosotros/vosotras) habláis</b>	you speak
<b>-an</b>	<b>(ellos/ellas) hablan</b> <b>(ustedes) hablan</b>	they speak you speak

- ▶ You use the **él/ella** (*third person singular*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names, when you are just talking about one person, animal or thing.

**Lydia estudia medicina.** Lydia studies or is studying medicine.

**Mi profesor me ayuda mucho.** My teacher helps me a lot.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- ▶ You use the **ellos/ellas** (*third person plural*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names, when you are talking about more than one person, animal or thing.

**Lydia y Carlos estudian medicina.** Lydia and Carlos study or are studying medicine.

**Mis profesores me ayudan mucho.** My teachers help me a lot.

ⓘ Note that even though you use the **él/ella** and **ellos/ellas** forms of the verb to talk about things in Spanish, you should **never** include the pronouns **él**, **ella**, **ellos** or **ellas** themselves in the sentence when referring to things.

**Funciona bien.** It works well.

**Funcionan bien.** They work well.

➡ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

#### Key points

- ✓ Verbs ending in **-ar** belong to the first conjugation. Regular **-ar** verbs form their present tense stem by losing the **-ar**.
- ✓ The present tense endings for regular **-ar** verbs are: **-o**, **-as**, **-a**, **-amos**, **-áis**, **-an**.
- ✓ You usually don't need to give a pronoun in Spanish as the ending of the verb makes it clear who or what is doing the action.

### 2 Forming the present simple tense of regular -er verbs

- ▶ If the infinitive of the Spanish verb ends in **-er**, it means that the verb belongs to the **second conjugation**, for example, **comer**, **depender**.
- ▶ The stem of regular **-er** verbs in the present simple tense is formed by taking the **infinitive** and chopping off **-er**.

Infinitive	Stem (without -er)
<b>comer</b> (to eat)	<b>com-</b>
<b>depender</b> (to depend)	<b>depend-</b>

- ▶ Now add the correct ending, depending on who or what is doing the action.

ⓘ Note that as the ending generally makes it clear who is doing the action, you usually don't need to add a subject pronoun such as **yo** (meaning *I*) or **tú** (meaning *you*) as well.

➡ For more information on **Subject pronouns**, see page 42.



► Here are the present simple endings for regular **-er** verbs:

Present simple endings	Present simple of <b>comer</b>	Meaning: <b>to eat</b>
<b>-o</b>	(yo) <b>como</b>	I eat
<b>-es</b>	(tú) <b>comes</b>	you eat
<b>-e</b>	(él/ella) <b>come</b>	he/she/it eats
	(usted) <b>come</b>	you eat
<b>-emos</b>	(nosotros/nosotras) <b>comemos</b>	we eat
<b>-éis</b>	(vosotros/vosotras) <b>coméis</b>	you eat
<b>-en</b>	(ellos/ellas) <b>comen</b>	they eat
	(ustedes) <b>comen</b>	you eat

► You use the **él/ella** (*third person singular*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names, when you are just talking about one person, animal or thing.

**Juan come demasiado.** Juan eats too much.

**Mi padre me debe 15 euros.** My father owes me 15 euros.

► You use the **ellos/ellas** (*third person plural*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names, when you talking about more than one person, animal or thing.

**Juan y Pedro comen demasiado.** Juan and Pedro eat too much.

**Mis padres me deben 15 euros.** My parents owe me 15 euros.

ⓘ Note that even though you use the **él/ella** and **ellos/ellas** forms of the verb to talk about things in Spanish, you should **never** include the pronouns **él**, **ella**, **ellos** or **ellas** themselves in the sentence when referring to things.

**Depende.** It depends.

⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

### Key points

- ✓ Verbs ending in **-er** belong to the second conjugation. Regular **-er** verbs form their present tense stem by losing the **-er**.
- ✓ The present tense endings for regular **-er** verbs are: **-o**, **-es**, **-e**, **-emos**, **-éis**, **-en**.
- ✓ You usually don't need to give a pronoun in Spanish as the ending of the verb makes it clear who or what is doing the action.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

### 3 Forming the present simple tense of regular **-ir** verbs

- If the infinitive of the Spanish verb ends in **-ir**, it means that the verb belongs to the **third conjugation**, for example, **vivir**, **recibir**.
- The stem of regular **-ir** verbs in the present simple tense is formed by taking the **infinitive** and chopping off **-ir**.

Infinitive	Stem (without <b>-ir</b> )
<b>vivir</b> (to live)	<b>viv-</b>
<b>recibir</b> (to receive)	<b>recib-</b>

► Now add the correct ending depending on who or what is doing the action.

ⓘ Note that as the ending generally makes it clear who is doing the action, you usually don't need to add a subject pronoun such as **yo** (meaning *I*) or **tú** (meaning *you*) as well.

⇒ For more information on **Subject pronouns**, see page 42.

► Here are the present simple endings for regular **-ir** verbs:

Present simple endings	Present simple of <b>vivir</b>	Meaning: <b>to live</b>
<b>-o</b>	(yo) <b>vivo</b>	I live
<b>-es</b>	(tú) <b>vives</b>	you live
<b>-e</b>	(él/ella) <b>vive</b>	he/she/it lives
	(usted) <b>vive</b>	you live
<b>-imos</b>	(nosotros/nosotras) <b>vivimos</b>	we live
<b>-ís</b>	(vosotros/vosotras) <b>vivís</b>	you live
<b>-en</b>	(ellos/ellas) <b>viven</b>	they live
	(ustedes) <b>viven</b>	you live

► You use the **él/ella** (*third person singular*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names, when you are just talking about one person, animal or thing.

**Javier vive aquí.** Javier lives here.

**Mi padre recibe muchas cartas.** My father gets a lot of letters.

► You use the **ellos/ellas** (*third person plural*) form of the verb with nouns and with people's names, when you talking about more than one person, animal or thing.

**Javier y Antonia viven aquí.** Javier and Antonia live here.

**Mis padres reciben muchas cartas.** My parents get a lot of letters.



- 7 Note that even though you use the **él/ella** and **ellos/ellas** forms of the verb to talk about things in Spanish, you should **never** include the pronouns **él, ella, ellos** or **ellas** themselves in the sentence when referring to things.

**Ocurrió ayer.**

It happened yesterday.

- ⇒ For more information on *Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish*, see page 44.

#### Key points

- ✓ Verbs ending in **-ir** belong to the third conjugation. Regular **-ir** verbs form their present tense stem by losing the **-ir**.
- ✓ The present tense endings for regular **-ir** verbs are: **-o, -es, -e, -imos, -ís, -en**.
- ✓ You usually don't need to give a pronoun in Spanish as the ending of the verb makes it clear who or what is doing the action.

#### 4 Forming the present simple tense of less regular verbs

- Many Spanish verbs do not follow the regular patterns shown previously. There are lots of verbs that change their **stem** in the present tense when the stress is on the stem. This means that all forms are affected in the present simple **APART FROM** the **nosotros** and **vosotros** forms. Such verbs are often called **radical-changing verbs**, meaning root-changing verbs.
- For example, some verbs containing an **-o** in the stem change it to **-ue** in the present simple for all forms **APART FROM** the **nosotros/nosotras** and **vosotros/vosotras** forms.

	<b>encontrar</b> <i>to find</i>	<b>recordar</b> <i>to remember</i>	<b>poder</b> <i>to be able</i>	<b>dormir</b> <i>to sleep</i>
<b>(yo)</b>	<b>encuentro</b>	<b>recuerdo</b>	<b>puedo</b>	<b>duermo</b>
<b>(tú)</b>	<b>encuentras</b>	<b>recuerdas</b>	<b>puedes</b>	<b>duermes</b>
<b>(él/ella/usted)</b>	<b>encuentra</b>	<b>recuerda</b>	<b>puede</b>	<b>duerme</b>
<b>(nosotros/as)</b>	<b>encontramos</b>	<b>recordamos</b>	<b>podemos</b>	<b>dormimos</b>
<b>(vosotros/as)</b>	<b>encontráis</b>	<b>recordáis</b>	<b>podéis</b>	<b>dormís</b>
<b>(ellos/ellas/ustedes)</b>	<b>encuentran</b>	<b>recuerdan</b>	<b>pueden</b>	<b>duermen</b>

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- Other verbs containing an **-e** in the stem change it to **-ie** for all forms **APART FROM** the **nosotros/nosotras** and **vosotros/vosotras** forms.

	<b>cerrar</b> <i>to close</i>	<b>pensar</b> <i>to think</i>	<b>entender</b> <i>to understand</i>	<b>perder</b> <i>to lose</i>	<b>preferir</b> <i>to prefer</i>
<b>(yo)</b>	<b>cierro</b>	<b>pienso</b>	<b>entiendo</b>	<b>pierdo</b>	<b>prefiero</b>
<b>(tú)</b>	<b>cierras</b>	<b>piensas</b>	<b>entiendes</b>	<b>pierdes</b>	<b>prefieres</b>
<b>(él/ella/usted)</b>	<b>cierra</b>	<b>piensa</b>	<b>entiende</b>	<b>pierde</b>	<b>prefiere</b>
<b>(nosotros/as)</b>	<b>cerramos</b>	<b>pensamos</b>	<b>entendemos</b>	<b>perdemos</b>	<b>preferimos</b>
<b>(vosotros/as)</b>	<b>cerráis</b>	<b>pensáis</b>	<b>entendéis</b>	<b>perdéis</b>	<b>preferís</b>
<b>(ellos/ellas/ustedes)</b>	<b>cierran</b>	<b>piensan</b>	<b>entienden</b>	<b>pierden</b>	<b>prefieren</b>

- A few **-ir** verbs containing **-e** in the stem change this to **-i** in the present simple for all forms **APART FROM** the **nosotros/nosotras** and **vosotros/vosotras** forms.

	<b>pedir</b> <i>to ask (for)</i>	<b>servir</b> <i>to serve</i>
<b>(yo)</b>	<b>pido</b>	<b>sirvo</b>
<b>(tú)</b>	<b>pides</b>	<b>sirves</b>
<b>(él/ella/usted)</b>	<b>pide</b>	<b>sirve</b>
<b>(nosotros/as)</b>	<b>pedimos</b>	<b>servimos</b>
<b>(vosotros/as)</b>	<b>pedís</b>	<b>servís</b>
<b>(ellos/ellas/ustedes)</b>	<b>piden</b>	<b>sirven</b>

- If you are not sure whether a Spanish verb belongs to this group of **radical-changing verbs**, you can look up the **Verb Tables** in the supplement.

- ⇒ For more information on *Spelling*, see page 196.

#### 5 Forming the present simple tense of common irregular verbs

- There are many other verbs that do not follow the usual patterns in Spanish. These include some very common and important verbs such as **tener** (meaning *to have*), **hacer** (meaning *to do* or *to make*) and **ir** (meaning *to go*). These verbs are shown in full on the next page.



► Here are the present simple tense endings for **tener**:

	<b>tener</b>	<b>Meaning: to have</b>
(yo)	<b>tengo</b>	I have
(tú)	<b> tienes</b>	you have
(él/ella/usted)	<b> tiene</b>	he/she/it has, you have
(nosotros/nosotras)	<b> tenemos</b>	we have
(vosotros/vosotras)	<b> tenéis</b>	you have
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	<b> tienen</b>	they have, you have

**Tengo dos hermanas.** I have two sisters.  
**No tengo dinero.** I haven't any money.  
**¿Cuántos sellos tienes?** How many stamps have you got?  
**Tiene el pelo rubio.** He has blond hair.

► Here are the present simple tense endings for **hacer**:

	<b>hacer</b>	<b>Meaning: to do, to make</b>
(yo)	<b>hago</b>	I do, I make
(tú)	<b>haces</b>	you do, you make
(él/ella/usted)	<b>hace</b>	he/she/it does, he/she/it makes, you do, you make
(nosotros/nosotras)	<b>hacemos</b>	we do, we make
(vosotros/vosotras)	<b>hacéis</b>	you do, you make
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	<b>hacen</b>	they do, they make, you do, you make

**Hago una tortilla.** I'm making an omelette.  
**No hago mucho deporte.** I don't do a lot of sport.  
**¿Qué haces?** What are you doing?  
**Hace calor.** It's hot.

► Here are the present simple tense endings for **ir**:

	<b>ir</b>	<b>Meaning: to go</b>
(yo)	<b>voy</b>	I go
(tú)	<b>vas</b>	you go
(él/ella/usted)	<b>va</b>	he/she/it goes, you go
(nosotros/nosotras)	<b>vamos</b>	we go
(vosotros/vosotras)	<b>vais</b>	you go
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	<b>van</b>	they go, you go

**Voy a Salamanca.** I'm going to Salamanca.  
**¿Adónde vas?** Where are you going?  
**No va al colegio.** He doesn't go to school.  
**No van a vender la casa.** They aren't going to sell the house.

↪ For other irregular verbs in the present simple tense, see **Verb Tables** in the supplement.

## 6 How to use the present simple tense in Spanish

- The present simple tense is often used in Spanish in the same way as it is in English, although there are some differences.
  - As in English, you use the Spanish present simple to talk about:
    - things that are generally true
      - En verano hace calor.** It's hot in summer.
    - things that are true now
      - Viven en Francia.** They live in France.
    - things that happen all the time or at certain intervals or that you do as a habit
      - Marta lleva gafas.** Marta wears glasses.
      - Mi tío vende mariscos.** My uncle sells shellfish.
    - things that you are planning to do
      - El domingo jugamos en León.** We're playing in León on Sunday.
      - Mañana voy a Madrid.** I am going to Madrid tomorrow.
  - There are some instances when you would use the present simple in Spanish, but you wouldn't use it in English:
    - to talk about current projects and activities that may not actually be going on right at this very minute
      - Construye una casa.** He's building a house.
    - when you use certain time expressions in Spanish, especially **desde** (meaning *since*) and **desde hace** (meaning *for*), to talk about activities and states that started in the past and are still going on now
      - Jaime vive aquí desde hace dos años.** Jaime has been living here for two years.
      - Daniel vive aquí desde 1999.** Daniel has lived here since 1999.
      - Llevo horas esperando aquí.** I've been waiting here for hours.
- ↪ For more information on the use of tenses with **desde**, see page 189.



## ser and estar

- In Spanish there are two irregular verbs, **ser** and **estar**, that both mean to *be*, although they are used very differently. In the present simple tense, they follow the patterns shown below.

Pronoun	ser	estar	Meaning: to be
(yo)	soy	estoy	I am
(tú)	eres	estás	you are
(él/ella/usted)	es	está	he/she/it is, you are
(nosotros/nosotras)	somos	estamos	we are
(vosotros/vosotras)	sois	estáis	you are
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	son	están	they/you are

- **ser** is used:

- with an adjective when talking about a characteristic or fairly permanent quality, for example, shape, size, height, colour, material, nationality.

<b>Mi hermano es alto.</b>	My brother is tall.
<b>María es inteligente.</b>	María is intelligent.
<b>Es rubia.</b>	She's blonde.
<b>Es muy guapa.</b>	She's very pretty.
<b>Es rojo.</b>	It's red.
<b>Es de algodón.</b>	It's made of cotton.
<b>Sus padres son italianos.</b>	His parents are Italian.
<b>Es joven/viejo.</b>	He's young/old.
<b>Son muy ricos/pobres.</b>	They're very rich/poor.

- with a following noun or pronoun that tells you what someone or something is

<b>Miguel es camarero.</b>	Miguel is a waiter.
<b>Soy yo, Enrique.</b>	It's me, Enrique.
<b>Madrid es la capital de España.</b>	Madrid is the capital of Spain.

- to say that something belongs to someone

<b>La casa es de Javier.</b>	The house belongs to Javier.
<b>Es mío.</b>	It's mine.

- to talk about where someone or something comes from

<b>Yo soy de Escocia.</b>	I'm from Scotland.
<b>Mi mujer es de Granada.</b>	My wife is from Granada.

- to say what time it is or what the date is
 

<b>Son las tres y media.</b>	It's half past three.
<b>Mañana es sábado.</b>	Tomorrow is Saturday.
- in calculations
 

<b>Tres y dos son cinco.</b>	Three and two are five.
<b>¿Cuánto es? – Son dos euros.</b>	How much is it? It's two euros.

- when followed by an infinitive

<b>Lo importante es decir la verdad.</b>	The important thing is to tell the truth.
--	---

- ⇒ For more information on the **Infinitive**, see page 144.

- to describe actions using the passive (for example *they are made*, *it is sold*)

<b>Son fabricados en España.</b>	They are made in Spain.
----------------------------------	-------------------------

- ⇒ For more information on the **Passive**, see page 122.

- **estar** is used:

- to talk about where something or someone is

<b>Estoy en Madrid.</b>	I'm in Madrid.
<b>¿Dónde está Burgos?</b>	Where's Burgos?
<b>Está cerca de aquí.</b>	It's near here.

- with an adjective when there has been a change in the condition of someone or something or to suggest that there is something unexpected about them

<b>El café está frío.</b>	The coffee's cold.
<b>¡Qué guapa estás con este vestido!</b>	How pretty you look in that dress!
<b>Hoy estoy de mal humor.</b>	I'm in a bad mood today.

- ⇒ For more information on **Adjectives**, see page 19.

- with a past participle used as an adjective, to describe the state that something is in

<b>Las tiendas están cerradas.</b>	The shops are closed.
<b>No está terminado.</b>	It isn't finished.
<b>El lavabo está ocupado.</b>	The toilet is engaged.
<b>Está roto.</b>	It's broken.

- ⇒ For more information on **Past participles**, see page 115.



- when talking about someone's health
  - ¿Cómo están ustedes?** How are you?
  - Estamos todos bien.** We're all well.
- to form continuous tenses such as the present continuous tense
  - Está comiendo.** He's eating.
  - Estamos aprendiendo mucho.** We are learning a great deal.

⇒ For more information on the **Present continuous**, see page 84.

➤ Both **ser** and **estar** can be used with certain adjectives, but the meaning changes depending on which is used.

➤ Use **ser** to talk about permanent qualities.

<b>Marta es muy joven.</b>	Marta is very young.
<b>Es delgado.</b>	He's slim.
<b>Viajar es cansado.</b>	Travelling is tiring.
<b>La química es aburrida.</b>	Chemistry is boring.

➤ Use **estar** to talk about temporary states or qualities.

<b>Está muy joven con ese vestido.</b>	She looks very young in that dress.
<b>¡Estás muy delgada!</b>	You're looking very slim!
<b>Hoy estoy cansado.</b>	I'm tired today.
<b>Estoy aburrido.</b>	I'm bored.

➤ **ser** is used with adjectives such as **importante** (meaning *important*) and **imposible** (meaning *impossible*), when the subject is *it* in English.

<b>Es muy interesante.</b>	It's very interesting.
<b>Es imposible.</b>	It's impossible.
<b>Es fácil.</b>	It's easy.

➤ **ser** is used in certain set phrases.

<b>Es igual</b> or <b>Es lo mismo.</b>	It's all the same.
<b>Es para ti.</b>	It's for you.

➤ **estar** is also used in some set phrases.

• <b>estar de pie</b>	to be standing
• <b>Juan está de pie.</b>	Juan is standing.
• <b>estar de vacaciones</b>	to be on holiday
• <b>¿Estás de vacaciones?</b>	Are you on holiday?
• <b>estar de viaje</b>	to be on a trip
• <b>Mi padre está de viaje.</b>	My father's on a trip.
• <b>estar de moda</b>	to be in fashion

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

**Las pantallas de plasma están de moda.** Plasma screens are in fashion.

- **estar claro** to be obvious
- **Está claro que no entiendes.** It's obvious that you don't understand.

### Grammar Extra!

Both **ser** and **estar** can be used with past participles.

Use **ser** and the past participle in passive constructions to describe an action.

**Son fabricados en España.** They are made in Spain.

Use **estar** and the past participle to describe a state.

**Está terminado.** It's finished.

⇒ For more information on **Past participles**, see page 115.

### Key points

- ✓ **ser** and **estar** both mean *to be* in English, but are used very differently.
- ✓ **ser** and **estar** are irregular verbs. You have to learn them.
- ✓ Use **ser** with adjectives describing permanent qualities or characteristics; with nouns or pronouns telling you who or what somebody or something is; with time and dates; and to form the passive.
- ✓ Use **estar** to talk about location; health; with adjectives describing a change of state; and with past participles used as adjectives to describe states.
- ✓ **estar** is also used to form present continuous tenses.
- ✓ **ser** and **estar** can sometimes be used with the same adjectives, but the meaning changes depending on which verb is used.
- ✓ **ser** and **estar** are both used in a number of set phrases.



## The present continuous tense

- In Spanish, the present continuous tense is used to talk about something that is happening at this very moment.
- The Spanish present continuous tense is formed from the **present tense** of **estar** and the **gerund** of the verb. The gerund is the form of the verb that ends in **-ando** (for **-ar** verbs) or **-iendo** (for **-er** and **-ir** verbs) and is the same as the **-ing** form of the verb in English (for example, *walking, swimming*).

**Estoy trabajando**

I'm working.

**No estamos comiendo.**

We aren't eating.

**¿Estás escribiendo?**

Are you writing?

⇒ For more information on **estar** and the **Gerund**, see pages 80 and 125.

- To form the gerund of an **-ar** verb, take off the **-ar** ending of the infinitive and add **-ando**:

Infinitive	Meaning	Stem (without -ar)	Gerund	Meaning
hablar	to speak	habl-	hablando	speaking
trabajar	to work	trabaj-	trabajando	working

- To form the gerund of an **-er** or **-ir** verb, take off the **-er** or **-ir** ending of the infinitive and add **-iendo**:

Infinitive	Meaning	Stem (without -er/-ir)	Gerund	Meaning
comer	to eat	com-	comiendo	eating
escribir	to write	escrib-	escribiendo	writing

### Tip

Only use the present continuous to talk about things that are in the middle of happening right now. Use the present simple tense instead to talk about activities which are current but which may not be happening at this minute.

**Lydia estudia medicina.**

Lydia's studying medicine.

⇒ For more information on the **Present simple tense**, see page 72.

### Key points

- ✓ Only use the present continuous in Spanish for actions that are happening right now.
- ✓ To form the present continuous tense in Spanish, take the present tense of **estar** and add the gerund of the main verb.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## The imperative

### What is the imperative?

An imperative is a form of the verb used when giving orders and instructions, for example, *Sit down!; Don't go!; Let's start!*

### 1 Using the imperative

- In Spanish, the form of the imperative that you use for giving instructions depends on:
  - whether you are telling someone to do something or not to do something
  - whether you are talking to one person or to more than one person
  - whether you are on familiar or more formal terms with the person or people
- These imperative forms correspond to the familiar **tú** and **vosotros/vosotras** and to the more formal **usted** and **ustedes**, although you don't actually say these pronouns when giving instructions.

⇒ For more information on **Ways of saying 'you' in Spanish**, see page 44.

- There is also a form of the imperative that corresponds to *let's* in English.

### 2 Forming the imperative: instructions not to do something

- In orders that tell you **NOT** to do something and that have **no** in front of them in Spanish, the imperative forms for **tú**, **usted**, **nosotros/nosotras**, **vosotros/vosotras** and **ustedes** are all taken from a verb form called the **present subjunctive**. It's easy to remember because the endings for **-ar** and **-er** verbs are the opposite of what they are in the ordinary present tense.

⇒ For more information on the **Present tense** and the **Subjunctive**, see pages 69 and 134.

- In regular **-ar** verbs, you take off the **-as**, **-a**, **-amos**, **-áis** and **-an** endings of the present tense and replace them with: **-es**, **-e**, **-emos**, **-éis** and **-en**.

-ar verb	trabajar	to work
tú form	¡no trabajes!	Don't work!
usted form	¡no trabaje!	Don't work!
nosotros/as form	¡no trabajemos!	Let's not work!
vosotros/as form	¡no trabajéis!	Don't work!
ustedes form	¡no trabajen!	Don't work!



- In regular **-er** verbs, you take off the **-es, -e, -emos, -éis** and **-en** endings of the present tense and replace them with **-as, -a, -amos, -áis** and **-an**.

-er verb	comer	to eat
tú form	¡no comas!	Don't eat!
usted form	¡no coma!	Don't eat!
nosotros/as form	¡no comamos!	Let's not eat!
vosotros/as form	¡no comáis!	Don't eat!
ustedes form	¡no coman!	Don't eat!

- In regular **-ir** verbs, you take off the **-es, -e, -imos, -ís** and **-en** endings of the present tense and replace them with **-as, -a, -amos, -áis** and **-an**.

-ir verb	decidir	to decide
tú form	¡no decidas!	Don't decide!
usted form	¡no decida!	Don't decide!
nosotros/as form	¡no decidamos!	Let's not decide!
vosotros/as form	¡no decidáis!	Don't decide!
ustedes form	¡no decidan!	Don't decide!

- A number of irregular verbs also have irregular imperative forms. These are shown in the table below.

	dar to give	decir to say	estar to be	hacer to do/make	ir to go
tú form	¡no des! don't give!	¡no digas! don't say!	¡no estés! don't be!	¡no hagas! don't do/make!	¡no vayas! don't go!
usted form	¡no dé! don't give!	¡no diga! don't say!	¡no esté! don't be!	¡no haga! don't do/make!	¡no vaya! don't go!
nosotros form	¡no demos! let's not give!	¡no digamos! let's not say!	¡no estemos! let's not be!	¡no hagamos! let's not do/make!	¡no vayamos! let's not go!
vosotros form	¡no deis! don't give!	¡no digáis! don't say!	¡no estéis! don't be!	¡no hagáis! don't do/make!	¡no vayáis! don't go!
ustedes form	¡no den! don't give!	¡no digan! don't say!	¡no estén! don't be!	¡no hagan! don't do/make!	¡no vayan! don't go!
	poner to put	salir to leave	ser to be	tener to have	venir to come
tú form	¡no pongas! don't put!	¡no salgas! don't leave!	¡no seas! don't be!	¡no tengas! don't have!	¡no vengas! don't come!
usted form	¡no ponga! don't put!	¡no salga! don't leave!	¡no sea! don't be!	¡no tenga! don't have!	¡no venga! don't come!
nosotros form	¡no pongamos! let's not put!	¡no salgamos! let's not leave!	¡no seamos! let's not be!	¡no tengamos! let's not have!	¡no vengamos! let's not come!
vosotros form	¡no pongáis! don't put!	¡no salgáis! don't leave!	¡no seáis! don't be!	¡no tengáis! don't have!	¡no vengáis! don't come!
ustedes form	¡no pongan! don't put!	¡no salgan! don't leave!	¡no sean! don't be!	¡no tengan! don't have!	¡no vengan! don't come!

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- 7 Note that if you take the **yo** form of the present tense, take off the **-o** and add the endings to this instead for instructions **NOT TO DO** something, some of these irregular forms will be more predictable.

<b>digo</b>	<i>I say</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	<b>dig-</b>
<b>hago</b>	<i>I do</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	<b>hag-</b>
<b>pongo</b>	<i>I put</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	<b>pong-</b>
<b>salgo</b>	<i>I leave</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	<b>salg-</b>
<b>tengo</b>	<i>I have</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	<b>teng-</b>
<b>vengo</b>	<i>I come</i>	→	negative imperative stem	→	<b>veng-</b>

### 3 Forming the imperative: instructions to do something

- In instructions telling you **TO DO** something, the forms for **usted, nosotros** and **ustedes** are exactly the same as they are in negative instructions (instructions telling you not to do something) except that there isn't a **no**.

	trabajar to work	comer to eat	decidir to decide
usted form	¡Trabaje!	¡Coma!	¡Decida!
nosotros/as form	¡Trabajemos!	¡Comamos!	¡Decidamos!
ustedes form	¡Trabajen!	¡Coman!	¡Decidan!

- There are special forms of the imperative for **tú** and **vosotros/vosotras** in positive instructions (instructions telling you to do something).
- The **tú** form of the imperative is the same as the **tú** form of the ordinary present simple tense, but without the final **-s**.

<b>trabajar</b>	→	<b>¡Trabaja!</b>
to work		Work!
<b>comer</b>	→	<b>¡Come!</b>
to eat		Eat!
<b>decidir</b>	→	<b>¡Decide!</b>
to decide		Decide!

- ⇒ For more information on the **Present simple tense**, see page 72.

- The **vosotros/vosotras** form of the imperative is the same as the infinitive, except that you take off the final **-r** and add **-d** instead.

<b>trabajar</b>	→	<b>¡Trabajad!</b>
to work		Work!
<b>comer</b>	→	<b>¡Comed!</b>
to eat		Eat!
<b>decidir</b>	→	<b>¡Decidid!</b>
to decide		Decide!



- There are a number of imperative forms that are irregular in Spanish. The irregular imperative forms for **usted**, **nosotros/nosotras** and **ustedes** are the same as the irregular negative imperative forms without the **no**. The **tú** and **vosotros/vosotras** forms are different again.

	<b>dar</b> to give	<b>decir</b> to say	<b>estar</b> to be	<b>hacer</b> to do/make	<b>ir</b> to go
<b>tú</b> form	<b>¡da!</b> give!	<b>¡di!</b> say!	<b>¡está!</b> be!	<b>¡haz!</b> do/make!	<b>¡ve!</b> go!
<b>usted</b> form	<b>¡dé!</b> give!	<b>¡diga!</b> say!	<b>¡esté!</b> be!	<b>¡haga!</b> do/make!	<b>¡vaya!</b> go!
<b>nosotros/as</b> form	<b>¡demo!</b> let's give!	<b>¡digamos!</b> let's say!	<b>¡estemos!</b> let's be!	<b>¡hagamos!</b> let's do/make!	<b>¡vamos!</b> let's go!
<b>vosotros/as</b> form	<b>¡dad!</b> give!	<b>¡decid!</b> say!	<b>¡estad!</b> be!	<b>¡haced!</b> do/make!	<b>¡id!</b> go!
<b>ustedes</b> form	<b>¡den!</b> give!	<b>¡digan!</b> say!	<b>¡estén!</b> be!	<b>¡hagan!</b> do/make!	<b>¡vayan!</b> go!
	<b>poner</b> to put	<b>salir</b> to leave	<b>ser</b> to be	<b>tener</b> to have	<b>venir</b> to come
<b>tú</b> form	<b>¡pon!</b> put!	<b>¡sal!</b> leave!	<b>¡sé!</b> be!	<b>¡ten!</b> have!	<b>¡ven!</b> come!
<b>usted</b> form	<b>¡ponga!</b> put!	<b>¡salga!</b> leave!	<b>¡sea!</b> be!	<b>¡tenga!</b> have!	<b>¡venga!</b> come!
<b>nosotros/as</b> form	<b>¡pongamos!</b> let's put!	<b>¡salgamos!</b> let's leave!	<b>¡seamos!</b> let's be!	<b>¡tengamos!</b> let's have!	<b>¡vengamos!</b> let's come!
<b>vosotros/as</b> form	<b>¡poned!</b> put!	<b>¡salid!</b> leave!	<b>¡sed!</b> be!	<b>¡tened!</b> have!	<b>¡venid!</b> come!
<b>ustedes</b> form	<b>¡pongan!</b> put!	<b>¡salgan!</b> leave!	<b>¡sean!</b> be!	<b>¡tengan!</b> have!	<b>¡vengan!</b> come!

- 7 Note that the **nosotros/as** form for **ir** in instructions **TO DO** something is **vamos**; in instructions **NOT TO DO** something, it is **no vayamos**.

#### 4 Position of object pronouns

- An object pronoun is a word like **me** (meaning *me* or *to me*), **la** (meaning *her/it*) or **les** (meaning *them/to you*) that is used instead of a noun as the object of a sentence. In orders and instructions, the position of these object pronouns in the sentence changes depending on whether you are telling someone **TO DO** something or **NOT TO DO** something.

⇒ For more information on **Object pronouns**, see page 46.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- If you are telling someone **NOT TO DO** something, the object pronouns go **BEFORE** the verb.

<b>¡No me lo mandes!</b>	Don't send it to me!
<b>¡No me molestes!</b>	Don't disturb me!
<b>¡No los castigue!</b>	Don't punish them!
<b>¡No se la devolvamos!</b>	Let's not give it back to him/her/them!
<b>¡No las contestéis!</b>	Don't answer them!

- If you are telling someone **TO DO** something, the object pronouns join on to the **END** of the verb. An accent is usually added to make sure that the stress in the imperative verb stays the same.

<b>¡Explicámelo!</b>	Explain it to me!
<b>¡Perdóneme!</b>	Excuse me!
<b>¡Dígame!</b>	Tell me!
<b>¡Esperémosla!</b>	Let's wait for her/it!

- 7 Note that when there are two object pronouns, the indirect object pronoun always goes before the direct object pronoun.

⇒ For more information on **Stress**, see page 200.

#### 5 Other ways of giving instructions

- For general instructions in instruction leaflets, recipes and so on, use the **infinitive** form instead of the imperative.

**Ver página 9.** See page 9.

- **vamos a** with the infinitive is often used to mean *let's*.

<b>Vamos a ver.</b>	Let's see.
<b>Vamos a empezar.</b>	Let's start.

Me baño a las siete y media.	I have a bath at half past seven.
¡Duermete!	Go to sleep!
Mi hermana se ducha.	My sister has a shower.
Mi madre se enfada mucho.	My mother often gets angry.
Mi hermano no se lava.	My brother doesn't wash.
Me levanto a las siete.	I get up at seven o'clock.
¿Cómo te llamas?	What's your name?
¿A qué hora os acostáis?	What time do you go to bed?
¡Sentate!	Sit down!
Nos vestimos.	We're getting dressed.



## Key points

- ✓ In Spanish, in instructions **not to do** something, the endings are taken from the present subjunctive. They are the same as the corresponding endings for **-ar** and **-er** verbs in the ordinary present tense, except that the **-e** endings go on the **-ar** verbs and the **-a** endings go on the **-er** and **-ir** verbs.
- ✓ For **-ar** verbs the forms are: **no hables** (tú form); **no hable** (usted form); **no hablemos** (nosotros/as form); **no habléis** (vosotros/as form); **no hablen** (ustedes form)
- ✓ For **-er** verbs the forms are: **no comas** (tú form); **no coma** (usted form); **no comamos** (nosotros/as form); **no comáis** (vosotros/as form); **no coman** (ustedes form)
- ✓ For **-ir** verbs the forms are: **no decidas** (tú form); **no decida** (usted form); **no decidamos** (nosotros/as form); **no decidáis** (vosotros/as form); **no decidan** (ustedes form)
- ✓ In instructions **to do** something, the forms for **usted**, **nosotros/as** and **ustedes** are the same as they are in instructions not to do something.
- ✓ The forms for **tú** and **vosotros/as** are different:
  - the **tú** form is the same as the corresponding form in the ordinary present tense, but without the final **-s**: **trabaja**; **come**; **decide**
  - the **vosotros/as** form is the same as the infinitive but with a final **-d** instead of the **-r**: **trabajad**; **comed**; **decidid**
- ✓ A number of verbs have irregular imperative forms.
- ✓ The object pronouns in imperatives go before the verb when telling someone not to do something; they join onto the end of the verb when telling someone to do something.

Note that the **nosotros/as** or **ir** in instructions **TO DO** something is **vamos**; in instructions **NOT TO DO** something it is **no vayas**.

## 4 Position of object pronouns

- ▶ An object pronoun is a word like **me** (meaning *me* or *to me*), **la** (meaning *her*) or **les** (meaning *them/to them*) that is used instead of a noun as the object of a sentence. In orders and instructions, the position of these object pronouns in the sentence changes depending on whether you are telling someone **TO DO** something or **NOT TO DO** something.

For more information on Object pronouns, see page 46.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## Reflexive verbs

## What is a reflexive verb?

A **reflexive verb** is one where the subject and object are the same, and where the action 'reflects back' on the subject. It is used with a reflexive pronoun such as *myself*, *yourself* and *herself* in English, for example, *I washed myself.*; *He shaved himself.*

## 1 Using reflexive verbs

- ▶ In Spanish, reflexive verbs are much more common than in English, and many are used in everyday language. The infinitive form of a reflexive verb has **se** attached to the end of it, for example, **secarse** (meaning *to dry oneself*). This is the way reflexive verbs are shown in dictionaries. **se** means *himself*, *herself*, *itself*, *yourself*, *themselves*, *yourselves* and *oneself*. **se** is called a **reflexive pronoun**.
- ▶ In Spanish, reflexive verbs are often used to describe things you do to yourself every day or that involve a change of some sort, for example, going to bed, sitting down, getting angry, and so on. Some of the most common reflexive verbs in Spanish are listed here.

<b>acostarse</b>	to go to bed
<b>afeitarse</b>	to shave
<b>bañarse</b>	to have a bath, to have a swim
<b>dormirse</b>	to go to sleep
<b> ducharse</b>	to have a shower
<b>enfadarse</b>	to get angry
<b>lavarse</b>	to wash
<b>levantarse</b>	to get up
<b>llamarse</b>	to be called
<b>secarse</b>	to get dried
<b>sentarse</b>	to sit down
<b>vestirse</b>	to get dressed

<b>Me baño a las siete y media.</b>	I have a bath at half past seven.
<b>¡Duérmete!</b>	Go to sleep!
<b>Mi hermana se ducha.</b>	My sister has a shower.
<b>Mi madre se enfada mucho.</b>	My mother often gets angry.
<b>Mi hermano no se lava.</b>	My brother doesn't wash.
<b>Me levanto a las siete.</b>	I get up at seven o'clock.
<b>¿Cómo te llamas?</b>	What's your name?
<b>¿A qué hora os acostáis?</b>	What time do you go to bed?
<b>¡Sentaos!</b>	Sit down!
<b>Nos vestimos.</b>	We're getting dressed.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.



**i** Note that **se**, **me** and so on are very rarely translated as *himself*, *myself* and so on in English. Instead of *he dresses himself* or *they bath themselves*, in English, we are more likely to say *he gets dressed* or *they have a bath*.

- Some Spanish verbs can be used both as reflexive verbs and as ordinary verbs (without the reflexive pronoun). When they are used as ordinary verbs, the person or thing doing the action is not the same as the person or thing receiving the action, so the meaning is different.

<b>Me lavo.</b>	I wash (myself).
<b>Lavo la ropa a mano.</b>	I wash the clothes by hand.
<b>Me llamo Antonio.</b>	I'm called Antonio.
<b>¡Llama a la policía!</b>	Call the police!
<b>Me acuesto a las 11.</b>	I go to bed at 11 o'clock.
<b>Acuesta al niño.</b>	He puts the child to bed.

### Grammar Extra!

Some verbs mean **ALMOST** the same in the reflexive as when they are used on their own.

<b>Duermo.</b>	I sleep.
<b>Me duermo.</b>	I go to sleep.
<b>¿Quieres ir al cine?</b>	Do you want to go to the cinema?
<b>Acaba de irse.</b>	He has just left.

## 2 Forming the present tense of reflexive verbs

- To use a reflexive verb in Spanish, you need to decide which reflexive pronoun to use. See how the reflexive pronouns in the table on the next page correspond to the subject pronouns.

Subject pronoun	Reflexive pronoun	Meaning
(yo)	<b>me</b>	myself
(tú)	<b>te</b>	yourself
(él) (ella) (uno)	<b>se</b>	himself herself oneself itself yourself
(usted)		
(nosotros/nosotras)	<b>nos</b>	ourselves
(vosotros/vosotras)	<b>os</b>	yourselves
(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)	<b>se</b>	themselves yourselves

<b>(Yo) me levanto temprano.</b>	I get up early.
<b>(Él) se acuesta a las once.</b>	He goes to bed at eleven.
<b>Ellos no se afeitan.</b>	They don't shave.

- The present tense forms of a reflexive verb work in just the same way as an ordinary verb, except that the reflexive pronoun is used as well.

⇒ For more information on the **Present tense**, see page 69.

- The following table shows the reflexive verb **lavarse** in full.

Reflexive forms of lavarse	Meaning
(yo) me lavo	I wash (myself)
(tú) te lavas	you wash (yourself)
(él) se lava	he washes (himself)
(ella) se lava	she washes (herself)
(uno) se lava	one washes (oneself)
se lava	it washes (itself)
(usted) se lava	you wash (yourself)
(nosotros/nosotras) nos lavamos	we wash (ourselves)
(vosotros/vosotras) os laváis	you wash (yourselves)
(ellos) se lavan	they wash (themselves)
(ellas) se lavan	they wash (themselves)
(ustedes) se lavan	you wash (yourselves)

- Some reflexive verbs, such as **acostarse**, are irregular. Some of these irregular verbs are shown in the **Verb tables** in the supplement.



### 3 Position of reflexive pronouns

- In ordinary tenses such as the present simple, the reflexive pronoun goes **BEFORE** the verb.

<b>Me acuesto temprano.</b>	I go to bed early.
<b>¿Cómo se llama usted?</b>	What's your name?

⇒ For more information on the *Present simple tense*, see page 72.

- When telling someone **NOT TO DO** something, you also put the reflexive pronoun **BEFORE** the verb.

<b>No te levantes.</b>	Don't get up.
<b>¡No os vayáis!</b>	Don't go away!

- When telling someone **TO DO** something, you join the reflexive pronoun onto the end of the verb.

<b>¡Siéntense!</b>	Sit down!
<b>¡Cállate!</b>	Be quiet!

⇒ For more information on the *Imperative*, see page 85.

#### Tip

When adding reflexive pronouns to the end of the imperative, you drop the final **-s** of the **nosotros** form and the final **-d** of the **vosotros** form, before the pronoun.

<b>¡Vámonos!</b>	Let's go!
<b>¡Sentaos!</b>	Sit down!

- You always join the reflexive pronoun onto the end of infinitives and gerunds (the **-ando** or **-iendo** forms of the verb) unless the infinitive or gerund follows another verb.

<b>Hay que relajarse de vez en cuando.</b>	You have to relax from time to time.
<b>Acostándose temprano, se descansa mejor.</b>	You feel more rested by going to bed early.

- Where the infinitive or gerund follows another verb, you can put the reflexive pronoun either at the end of the infinitive or gerund or before the other verb.

<b>Quiero bañarme</b> or <b>Me quiero bañar.</b>	I want to have a bath.
--	------------------------

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

**Tienes que vestirte** or **Te tienes que vestir.** You must get dressed.

**Está vistiéndose** or **Se está vistiendo.** She's getting dressed.

**¿Estás duchándote?** or **¿Te estás duchando?** Are you having a shower?

⇒ For more information on *Gerunds*, see page 125.

- 7 Note that, when adding pronouns to the ends of verb forms, you will often have to add a written accent to preserve the stress.

⇒ For more information on *Stress*, see page 200.

### 4 Using reflexive verbs with parts of the body and clothes

- In Spanish, you often talk about actions to do with your body or your clothing using a reflexive verb.

<b>Se está secando el pelo.</b>	She's drying her hair.
<b>Nos lavamos los dientes.</b>	We clean our teeth.
<b>Se está poniendo el abrigo.</b>	He's putting on his coat.

- 7 Note that in Spanish you do not use a possessive adjective such as *my* and *her* when talking about parts of the body. You use **el**, **la**, **los** and **las** with a reflexive verb instead.

**Me estoy lavando las manos.** I'm washing my hands.

⇒ For more information on *Articles*, see page 10.

### 5 Other uses of reflexive verbs

- In English we often use a passive construction, for example, *goods are transported all over the world, most of our tea is imported from India and China*. In Spanish, this construction is not used so much. Instead, very often a reflexive verb with **se** is used.

<b>Aquí se vende café.</b>	Coffee <u>is sold</u> here.
<b>Aquí se venden muchos libros.</b>	Lots of books <u>are sold</u> here.
<b>Se habla inglés.</b>	English <u>is spoken</u> here.
<b>En Suiza se hablan tres idiomas.</b>	Three languages <u>are spoken</u> in Switzerland.

- 7 Note that the verb has to be singular or plural depending on whether the noun is singular or plural.

⇒ For more information on the *Passive*, see page 122.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.



- A reflexive verb with **se** is also used in some very common expressions.
  - ¿Cómo **se dice** "siesta" en inglés? How do you say "siesta" in English?
  - ¿Cómo **se escribe** "Tarragona"? How do you spell "Tarragona"?
- **se** is also used in impersonal expressions. In this case, it often corresponds to *one* (or *you*) in English.
  - No se puede entrar.** You can't go in.
  - No se permite.** You aren't or It isn't allowed.

⇒ For more information on *Impersonal verbs*, see page 129.

- **nos, os** and **se** are all also used to mean *each other* and *one another*.
  - Nos escribimos.** We write to one another.
  - Nos queremos.** We love each other.
  - Rachel y Julie se odian.** Rachel and Julie hate each other.
  - No se conocen.** They don't know each other.

#### Key points

- ✓ A reflexive verb is made up of a reflexive pronoun and a verb.
- ✓ The reflexive pronouns are: **me, te, se, nos, os, se.**
- ✓ The reflexive pronoun goes before the verb, except when you are telling someone to do something and with infinitives and gerunds.

## The future tense

### What is the future tense?

The **future tense** is a verb tense used to talk about something that will happen or will be true in the future, for example, *He'll be here soon; I'll give you a call; What will you do?; It will be sunny tomorrow.*

### 1 Ways of talking about the future

- In Spanish, just as in English, you can often use the present tense to refer to something that is going to happen in the future.

**Cogemos el tren de las once.** We're getting the eleven o'clock train.

**Mañana voy a Madrid.** I am going to Madrid tomorrow.

- In English we often use *going to* with an infinitive to talk about the immediate future or our future plans. In Spanish, you can use the present tense of **ir** followed by **a** and an infinitive.

**Va a perder el tren.** He's going to miss the train.

**Va a llevar una media hora.** It's going to take about half an hour.

**Voy a hacerlo mañana.** I'm going to do it tomorrow.

### 2 Forming the future tense

- In English we can form the future tense by putting *will* or its shortened form *'ll* before the verb. In Spanish you have to change the verb endings. So, just as **hablo** means *I speak*, **hablaré** means *I will speak* or *I shall speak*.
- To form the future tense of regular **-ar, -er** and **-ir** verbs, add the following endings to the infinitive of the verb: **-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án.**
- The following table shows the future tense of three regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

(yo)	hablaré	comeré	viviré	I'll speak/eat/live
(tú)	hablarás	comerás	vivirás	you'll speak/eat/live
(él) (ella)	hablará	comerá	vivirá	he'll speak/eat/live she'll speak/eat/live
(usted)				it'll speak/eat/live you'll speak/eat/live
(nosotros/nosotras)	hablaremos	comeremos	viviremos	we'll speak/eat/live
(vosotros/vosotras)	hablaréis	comeréis	viviréis	you'll speak/eat/live
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hablarán	comerán	vivirán	they'll/you'll speak/eat/live



**Hablaré con ella.**

I'll speak to her.

**Comeremos en casa de José.**

We'll eat at José's.

**No volverá.**

He won't come back.

**¿Lo entenderás?**

Will you understand it?

- ?** Note that in the future tense only the **nosotros/nosotras** form doesn't have an accent.

### Tip

Remember that Spanish has no direct equivalent of the word *will* in verb forms like *will rain* or *will look* and so on. You change the Spanish verb ending instead to form the future tense.

### Grammar Extra!

In English, we sometimes use *will* with the meaning of *be willing to* rather than simply to express the future, for example, *Will you wait for me a moment?* In Spanish you don't use the future tense to say this; you use the verb **querer** (meaning *to want*) instead.

**¿Me quieres esperar un momento, por favor?** Will you wait for me a moment, please?

### 3 Verbs with irregular stems in the future tense

- There are a few verbs that **DO NOT** use their infinitives as the stem for the future tense. Here are some of the most common.

Verb	Stem	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
decir to say	dir-	diré	dirás	dirá	diremos	diréis	dirán
haber to have	habr-	habré	habrás	habrá	habremos	habréis	habrán
hacer to do/make	har-	haré	harás	hará	haremos	haréis	harán
poder to be able to	podr-	podré	podrás	podrá	podremos	podréis	podrán
poner to put	pondr-	pondré	pondrás	pondrá	pondremos	pondréis	pondrán
querer to want	querr-	querré	querrás	querrá	querremos	querréis	querrán
saber to know	sabr-	sabré	sabrás	sabrá	sabremos	sabréis	sabrán

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

Verb	Stem	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
salir to leave	saldr-	saldré	saldrás	saldrá	saldremos	saldréis	saldrán
tener to have	tendr-	tendré	tendrás	tendrá	tendremos	tendréis	tendrán
venir to come	vendr-	vendré	vendrás	vendrá	vendremos	vendréis	vendrán

**Lo haré mañana.**

I'll do it tomorrow.

**No podremos hacerlo.**

We won't be able to do it.

**Lo pondré aquí.**

I'll put it here.

**Saldrán por la mañana.**

They'll leave in the morning.

**¿A qué hora vendrás?**

What time will you come?

- ?** Note that the verb **haber** is only used when forming other tenses, such as the perfect tense, and in the expression **hay** (meaning *there is* or *there are*).

➔ For more information on the **Perfect tense** and on **hay**, see pages 115 and 130.

### 4 Reflexive verbs in the future tense

- The future tense of reflexive verbs is formed in just the same way as for ordinary verbs, except that you have to remember to give the reflexive pronoun (**me, te, se, nos, os, se**).

**Me levantaré temprano.**

I'll get up early.

#### Key points

- ✓ You can use a present tense in Spanish to talk about something that will happen or be true, just as in English.
- ✓ You can use **ir a** with an infinitive to talk about things that will happen in the immediate future.
- ✓ In Spanish there is no direct equivalent of the word *will* in verb forms like *will rain* and *will look*. You change the verb endings instead.
- ✓ To form the future tense, add the endings **-é, -ás, á, -emos, -éis, -án** to the infinitive.
- ✓ Some verbs have irregular stems in the future tense. It is worth learning these.



## The conditional

### What is the conditional?

The **conditional** is a verb form used to talk about things that would happen or that would be true under certain conditions, for example, I would help you if I could.

It is also used to say what you would like or need, for example, Could you give me the bill?

### 1 Using the conditional

- You can often recognize a conditional in English by the word *would* or its shortened form 'd.

I would be sad if you left.

If you asked him, he'd help you.

- You use the conditional for:

- saying what you would like to do

**Me gustaría conocerlo.**

I'd like to meet him.

- making suggestions

**Podrías alquilar una bici.**

You could hire a bike.

- giving advice

**Deberías hacer más ejercicio.**

You should take more exercise.

- saying what you would do

**Le dije que le ayudaría.**

I said I would help him.

### Tip

There is no direct Spanish translation of *would* in verb forms like *would be*, *would like*, *would help* and so on. You change the Spanish verb ending instead.

### 2 Forming the conditional

- To form the conditional of regular **-ar**, **-er**, and **-ir** verbs, add the following endings to the **infinitive** of the verb: **-ía**, **-ías**, **-ía**, **-íamos**, **-íais**, **-ían**.

- The following table shows the conditional tense of three regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

(yo)	hablar <u>ía</u>	comer <u>ía</u>	vivir <u>ía</u>	I would speak/eat/live
(tú)	hablar <u>ías</u>	comer <u>ías</u>	vivir <u>ías</u>	you would speak/eat/live
(él) (ella)	hablar <u>ía</u>	comer <u>ía</u>	vivir <u>ía</u>	he would speak/eat/live she would speak/eat/live
(usted)				it would speak/eat/live you would speak/eat/live
(nosotros/nosotras)	hablar <u>íamos</u>	comer <u>íamos</u>	vivir <u>íamos</u>	we would speak/eat/live
(vosotros/vosotras)	hablar <u>íais</u>	comer <u>íais</u>	vivir <u>íais</u>	you would speak/eat/live
(ellos/ellas) (ustedes)	hablar <u>ían</u>	comer <u>ían</u>	vivir <u>ían</u>	they would speak/eat/live you would speak/eat/live

**Me gustaría ir a China.**

I'd like to go to China.

**Dije que hablaría con ella.**

I said that I would speak to her.

**Debería llamar a mis padres.**

I should ring my parents.

### Tip

Don't forget to put an accent on the **í** in the conditional.

- 7 Note that the endings in the conditional tense are identical to those of the **imperfect tense** for **-er** and **-ir** verbs. The only difference is that they are added to a different stem.

- ⇒ For more information on the **Imperfect tense**, see page 110.



### 3 Verbs with irregular stems in the conditional

- To form the conditional of irregular verbs, use the same stem as for the **future tense**, then add the usual endings for the conditional. The same verbs that are irregular in the future tense are irregular in the conditional.

Verb	Stem	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
decir to say	dir-	diría	dirías	diría	diríamos	diríais	dirían
haber to have	habr-	habría	habrías	habría	habríamos	habríais	habrían
hacer to do/ make	har-	haría	harías	haría	haríamos	haríais	harían
poder to be able to	podr-	podría	podrías	podría	podríamos	podríais	podrían
poner to put	pondr-	pondría	pondrías	pondría	pondríamos	pondríais	pondrían
querer to want	querr-	querría	querrias	querría	querriamos	querriais	querrían
saber to know	sabr-	sabría	sabrías	sabría	sabríamos	sabríais	sabrían
salir to leave	saldr-	saldría	saldrías	saldría	saldríamos	saldríais	saldrían
tener to have	tendr-	tendría	tendrías	tendría	tendríamos	tendríais	tendrían
venir to come	vendr-	vendría	vendrías	vendría	vendríamos	vendríais	vendrían

- ⇒ For more information on the **Future tense**, see page 97.

¿Qué harías tú en mi lugar?

What would you do if you were me?

¿Podrías ayudarme?

Could you help me?

Yo lo pondría aquí.

I would put it here.

- ❗ Note that the verb **haber** is only used when forming other tenses, such as the perfect tense, and in the expression **hay** (meaning *there is/there are*).

- ⇒ For more information on the **Perfect tense** and on **hay**, see pages 115 and 130.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

### 4 Reflexive verbs in the conditional

- The conditional of reflexive verbs is formed in just the same way as for ordinary verbs, except that you have to remember to give the reflexive pronoun (**me, te, se, nos, os, se**).

Le dije que **me levantaría temprano**.

I said I would get up early.

#### Key points

- ✓ In Spanish, there is no direct equivalent of the word *would* in verb forms like *would go* and *would look* and so on. You change the verb ending instead.
- ✓ To form the conditional tense, add the endings **-ía, ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían** to the infinitive. The conditional uses the same stem as for the future.
- ✓ Some verbs have irregular stems which are used for both the conditional and the future. It is worth learning these.



## The preterite

### What is the preterite?

The **preterite** is a form of the verb that is used to talk about actions that were completed in the past in Spanish. It often corresponds to the simple past in English, as in *I bought a new bike; Mary went to the shops on Friday; I typed two reports yesterday.*

### 1 Using the preterite

- ▶ In English, we use the **simple past tense** to talk about actions:
  - that were completed at a certain point in the past  
I bought a dress yesterday.
  - that were part of a series of events  
I went to the beach, undressed and put on my swimsuit.
  - that went on for a certain amount of time  
The war lasted three years.
- ▶ In English, we also use the **simple past tense** to describe actions which happened frequently (*Our parents took us swimming in the holidays*), and to describe settings (*It was a dark and stormy night*).
- ▶ In Spanish, the **preterite** is the most common tense for talking about the past. You use the preterite for actions:
  - that were completed at a certain point in the past  
**Ayer compré un vestido.** I bought a dress yesterday.
  - that were part of a series of events  
**Fui a la playa, me quité la ropa y me puse el bañador.** I went to the beach, undressed and put on my swimsuit.
  - that went on for a certain amount of time  
**La guerra duró tres años.** The war lasted for three years.
- ▶ However, you use the **imperfect tense** for actions that happened frequently (where you could use *used to* in English) and for descriptions of settings.

⇒ For more information on the **Imperfect tense**, see page 110.

### 2 Forming the preterite of regular verbs

- ▶ To form the preterite of any regular **-ar** verb, you take off the **-ar** ending to form the stem, and add the endings: **-é, -aste, -ó, -amos, -asteis, -aron.**

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- ▶ To form the preterite of any regular **-er** or **-ir** verb, you also take off the **-er** or **-ir** ending to form the stem and add the endings: **-í, -iste, -ió, -imos, -isteis, -ieron.**
- ▶ The following table shows the preterite of three regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

(yo)	<b>hablé</b>	<b>comí</b>	<b>viví</b>	I spoke/ate/lived
(tú)	<b>hablaste</b>	<b>comiste</b>	<b>viviste</b>	you spoke/ate/lived
(él) (ella)	<b>habló</b>	<b>comió</b>	<b>vivió</b>	he spoke/ate/lived she spoke/ate/lived
(usted)				it spoke/ate/lived you spoke/ate/lived
(nosotros/nosotras)	<b>hablamos</b>	<b>comimos</b>	<b>vivimos</b>	we spoke/ate/lived
(vosotros/vosotras)	<b>hablasteis</b>	<b>comisteis</b>	<b>vivisteis</b>	you spoke/ate/lived
(ellos/ellas) (ustedes)	<b>hablaron</b>	<b>comieron</b>	<b>vivieron</b>	they spoke/ate/lived you spoke/ate/lived

**Bailé con mi hermana.**

I danced with my sister.

**No hablé con ella.**

I didn't speak to her.

**Comimos en un restaurante.**

We had lunch in a restaurant.

**¿Cerraste la ventana?**

Did you close the window?

- ❗ Note that Spanish has no direct translation of *did* or *didn't* in questions or negative sentences. You simply use a past tense and make it a question by making your voice go up at the end or changing the word order; you make it negative by adding **no**.

⇒ For more information on **Questions and Negatives**, see pages 160 and 157.

### Típ

Remember the accents on the **yo** and **él/ella/usted** forms of regular verbs in the preterite. Only an accent shows the difference, for example, between **hablo** I speak and **habló** he spoke.



### 3 Irregular verbs in the preterite

- A number of verbs have very irregular forms in the preterite. The table shows some of the most common.

Verb	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
<b>andar</b> to walk	anduve	anduviste	anduvo	anduvimos	anduvisteis	anduvieron
<b>conducir</b> to drive	conduje	condujiste	condujo	condujimos	condujisteis	condujeron
<b>dar</b> to give	di	diste	dio	dimos	disteis	dieron
<b>decir</b> to say	dije	dijiste	dijo	dijimos	dijisteis	dijeron
<b>estar</b> to be	estuve	estuviste	estuvo	estuvimos	estuvisteis	estuvieron
<b>hacer</b> to do, to make	hice	hiciste	hizo	hicimos	hicisteis	hicieron
<b>ir</b> to go	fui	fuiste	fue	fuimos	fuisteis	fueron
<b>poder</b> to be able to	pude	podiste	pudo	podimos	podisteis	podieron
<b>poner</b> to put	puse	pusiste	puso	pusimos	pusisteis	pusieron
<b>querer</b> to want	quise	quisiste	quiso	quisimos	quisisteis	quisieron
<b>saber</b> to know	supe	supiste	supo	supimos	supisteis	supieron
<b>ser</b> to be	fui	fuiste	fue	fuimos	fuisteis	fueron
<b>tener</b> to have	tuve	tuviste	tuvo	tuvimos	tuvisteis	tuvieron
<b>traer</b> to bring	traje	trajiste	trajo	trajimos	trajisteis	trajeron
<b>venir</b> to come	vine	viniste	vino	vinimos	vinisteis	vinieron
<b>ver</b> to see	vi	viste	vio	vimos	visteis	vieron

- ⓘ Note that **hizo** (the **él/ella/usted** form of **hacer**) is spelt with a **z**.

⇒ For more information on **Spelling**, see page 196.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

**Fue a Madrid.** He went to Madrid.  
**Te vi en el parque.** I saw you in the park.  
**No vinieron.** They didn't come.  
**¿Qué hizo?** What did she do?  
**Se lo di a Teresa.** I gave it to Teresa.  
**Fue en 1999.** It was in 1999.

### Tip

The preterite forms of **ser** (meaning *to be*) are the same as the preterite forms of **ir** (meaning *to go*).

- Some other verbs are regular EXCEPT FOR the **él/ella/usted** and **ellos/ellas/ustedes** forms (*third persons singular and plural*). In these forms the stem vowel changes.

Verb	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
<b>dormir</b> to sleep	dormí	dormiste	durmió	dormimos	dormisteis	durmieron
<b>morir</b> to die	morí	moriste	murio	morimos	moristeis	murieron
<b>pedir</b> to ask for	pedí	pediste	pidió	pedimos	pedisteis	pidieron
<b>reír</b> to laugh	reí	reíste	río	reímos	reísteis	rieron
<b>seguir</b> to follow	seguí	seguiste	siguió	seguimos	seguisteis	siguieron
<b>sentir</b> to feel	sentí	sentiste	sintió	sentimos	sentisteis	sintieron

- ⓘ Note that **reír** also has an accent in all persons apart from the **ellos/ellas/ustedes** forms.

**Antonio durmió diez horas.** Antonio slept for ten hours.  
**Murió en 1066.** He died in 1066.  
**Pidió paella.** He asked for paella.  
**¿Los siguió?** Did she follow them?  
**Sintió un dolor en la pierna.** He felt a pain in his leg.  
**Nos reímos mucho.** We laughed a lot.  
**Juan no se rió.** Juan didn't laugh.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.



- **caer** (meaning *to fall*) and **leer** (meaning *to read*) have an accent in all persons apart from the **ellos/ellas/ustedes** form (*third person plural*). In addition, the vowel changes to **y** in the **él/ella/usted** and **ellos/ellas/ustedes** forms (*third persons singular and plural*).

Verb	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
<b>caer</b> to fall	caí	caíste	cayó	caímos	caísteis	cayeron
<b>construir</b> to build	construí	construiste	construyó	construimos	construisteis	construyeron
<b>leer</b> to read	leí	leíste	leyó	leímos	leísteis	leyeron

- 7 Note that **construir** also changes to **y** in the **él/ella/usted** and **ellos/ellas/ustedes** forms (*third persons singular and plural*), but only has accents in the **yo** and **él/ella/usted** forms.

**Se cayó por la ventana.** He fell out of the window.

**Ayer leí un artículo muy interesante.** I read a very interesting article yesterday.

**Construyeron una nueva autopista.** They built a new motorway.

#### 4 Other spelling changes in the preterite

- Spanish verbs that end in **-zar**, **-gar** and **-car** in the infinitive change the **z** to **c**, the **g** to **gu** and the **c** to **qu** in the **yo** form (*first person singular*).

Verb	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
<b>cruzar</b> to cross	cru <u>ce</u>	cruzaste	cruzó	cruzamos	cruzasteis	cruzaron
<b>empezar</b> to begin	empe <u>ce</u>	empezaste	empezó	empezamos	empezasteis	empezaron
<b>pagar</b> to pay for	pagu <u>e</u>	pagaste	pagó	pagamos	pagasteis	pagaron
<b>sacar</b> to follow	sagu <u>e</u>	sacaste	sacó	sacamos	sacasteis	sacaron

**Cruce el río.** I crossed the river.

**Empece a hacer mis deberes.** I began doing my homework.

**No pague la cuenta.** I didn't pay the bill.

**Me sague las llaves del bolsillo.** I took my keys out of my pocket.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- 7 Note that the change from **g** to **gu** and **c** to **qu** before **e** is to keep the sound hard.

- For more information on **Spelling**, see page 196.

#### 5 Reflexive verbs in the preterite

- The preterite of reflexive verbs is formed in just the same way as for ordinary verbs, except that you have to remember to give the reflexive pronoun (**me**, **te**, **se**, **nos**, **os**, **se**).

**Me levanté a las siete.** I got up at seven.

#### Key points

- ✓ The preterite is the most common way to talk about the past in Spanish.
- ✓ To form the preterite of regular **-ar** verbs, take off the **-ar** ending and add the endings: **-é**, **-aste**, **-ó**, **-amos**, **-asteis**, **-aron**.
- ✓ To form the preterite of regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs, take off the **-er** and **-ir** endings and add the endings: **-í**, **-iste**, **-ió**, **-imos**, **-isteis**, **-ieron**.
- ✓ There are a number of verbs which are irregular in the preterite. These forms have to be learnt.
- ✓ With some verbs, the accents and spelling change in certain forms.



## The imperfect tense

### What is the imperfect tense?

The **imperfect tense** is one of the verb tenses used to talk about the past, especially in descriptions, and to say what was happening or used to happen, for example, *It was sunny at the weekend; We were living in Spain at the time; I used to walk to school.*

### 1 Using the imperfect tense

► In Spanish, the imperfect tense is used:

- to describe what things were like and how people felt in the past

**Hacía calor.** It was hot.

**No teníamos mucho dinero.** We didn't have much money.

**Tenía hambre.** I was hungry.

- to say what used to happen or what you used to do regularly in the past

**Cada día llamaba a su madre.** He used to ring his mother every day.

- to describe what was happening or what the situation was when something else took place

**Tomábamos café.** We were having coffee.

**Me caí cuando cruzaba la carretera.** I fell over when I was crossing the road.

### Grammar Extra!

Sometimes, instead of the ordinary imperfect tense being used to describe what was happening at a given moment in the past when something else occurred interrupting it, the continuous form is used. This is made up of the imperfect tense of **estar** (*estaba, estabas* and so on), followed by the **-ando/-iendo** form of the main verb. The other verb – the one that relates the event that occurred – is in the preterite.

**Montse miraba la televisión or Montse estaba mirando la televisión cuando sonó el teléfono.** Montse was watching television when the telephone rang.

⇒ For further information on the *Preterite*, see page 104.

### 2 Forming the imperfect tense

- To form the imperfect of any regular **-ar** verb, you take off the **-ar** ending of the infinitive to form the stem and add the endings: **-aba, -abas, -aba, -ábamos, -abais, -aban.**

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- The following table shows the imperfect tense of one regular **-ar** verb: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*).

(yo)	<b>hablaba</b>	I spoke I was speaking I used to speak
(tú)	<b>hablabas</b>	you spoke you were speaking you used to speak
(él/ella/usted)	<b>hablaba</b>	he/she/it/you spoke he/she/it was speaking, you were speaking he/she/it/you used to speak
(nosotros/nosotras)	<b>hablábamos</b>	we spoke we were speaking we used to speak
(vosotros/vosotras)	<b>hablabais</b>	you spoke you were speaking you used to speak
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	<b>hablaban</b>	they/you spoke they/you were speaking they/you used to speak

- ⓘ Note that in the imperfect tense of **-ar** verbs, the only accent is on the **nosotros/nosotras** form

**Hablaba francés e italiano.** He spoke French and Italian.

**Cuando era joven, mi tío trabajaba mucho.** My uncle worked hard when he was young.

**Estudiábamos matemáticas, e inglés.** We were studying maths and English.

- To form the imperfect of any regular **-er** or **-ir** verb, you take off the **-er** or **-ir** ending of the infinitive to form the stem and add the endings: **-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían.**



- The following table shows the imperfect of two regular verbs: **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

(yo)	<b>comía</b>	<b>vivía</b>	I ate/lived I was eating/living I used to eat/live
(tú)	<b>comías</b>	<b>vivías</b>	you ate/lived you were eating/living you used to eat/live
(él/ella/usted)	<b>comía</b>	<b>vivía</b>	he/she/it/you ate/lived he/she/it was eating/living, you were eating/living he/she/it was eating/living, you were eating/living
(nosotros/nosotras)	<b>comíamos</b>	<b>vivíamos</b>	we ate/lived we were eating/living we used to eat/live
(vosotros/vosotras)	<b>comíais</b>	<b>vivíais</b>	you ate/lived you were eating/living you used to eat/live
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	<b>comían</b>	<b>vivían</b>	they/you ate/lived they/you were eating/living they/you used to eat/live

- ❗ Note that in the imperfect tense of **-er** and **-ir** verbs, there's an accent on all the endings.

**A veces, comíamos en casa de Pepe.** We sometimes used to eat at Pepe's.

**Vivía en un piso en la Avenida de Barcelona.** She lived in a flat in Avenida de Barcelona.

**Cuando llegó el médico, ya se sentían mejor.** They were already feeling better when the doctor arrived.

### Típ

The imperfect endings for **-er** and **-ir** verbs are the same as the endings used to form the conditional for all verbs. The only difference is that, in the conditional, the endings are added to the future stem.

➡ For more information on the **Conditional**, see page 100.

### 3 Irregular verbs in the imperfect tense

- **ser**, **ir** and **ver** are irregular in the imperfect tense.

	<b>ser</b>	<b>Meaning:</b> to be
(yo)	<b>era</b>	I was
(tú)	<b>eras</b>	you were
(él/ella/usted)	<b>era</b>	he/she/it was, you were
(nosotros/nosotras)	<b>éramos</b>	we were
(vosotros/vosotras)	<b>erais</b>	you were
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	<b>eran</b>	they were/you were

**Era un chico muy simpático.**

He was a very nice boy.

**Mi madre era profesora.**

My mother was a teacher.

	<b>ir</b>	<b>Meaning:</b> to go
(yo)	<b>iba</b>	I went/used to go/was going
(tú)	<b>ibas</b>	you went/used to go/were going
(él/ella/usted)	<b>iba</b>	he/she/it went/used to go/was going, you went/used to go/were going
(nosotros/nosotras)	<b>íbamos</b>	we went/used to go/were going
(vosotros/vosotras)	<b>ibais</b>	you went/used to go/were going
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	<b>iban</b>	they/you went/used to go/were going

**Iba a la oficina cada día.**

Every day he would go to the office.

**¿Adónde iban?**

Where were they going?

	<b>ver</b>	<b>Meaning:</b> to see/to watch
(yo)	<b>veía</b>	I saw/used to see I watched/used to watch/was watching
(tú)	<b>veías</b>	you saw/used to see you watched/used to watch/were watching
(él/ella/usted)	<b>veía</b>	he/she/it saw/used to see he/she/it watched/used to watch/was watching you saw/used to see you watched/used to watch/were watching
(nosotros/nosotras)	<b>veíamos</b>	we saw/used to see we watched/used to watch/were watching
(vosotros/vosotras)	<b>veíais</b>	you saw/used to see you watched/used to watch/were watching
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	<b>veían</b>	they/you saw/used to see they/you watched/used to watch/were watching



<b>Los sábados, siempre lo veíamos.</b>	We always used to see him on Saturdays.
<b>Veía la televisión cuando llegó mi tío.</b>	I was watching television when my uncle arrived.

#### 4 Reflexive verbs in the imperfect tense

- The imperfect of reflexive verbs is formed in just the same way as for ordinary verbs, except that you have to remember to give the reflexive pronoun (**me, te, se, nos, os, se**).

**Antes se levantaba temprano.** He used to get up early.

#### Grammar Extra!

In Spanish, you also use the imperfect tense with certain time expressions, in particular with **desde** (meaning *since*), **desde hacía** (meaning *for*) and **hacía ... que** (meaning *for*) to talk about activities and states that had started previously and were still going on at a particular point in the past:

<b>Estaba enfermo desde 2000.</b>	He had been ill since 2000.
<b>Conducía ese coche desde hacía tres meses.</b>	He had been driving that car for three months.
<b>Hacía mucho tiempo que salían juntos.</b>	They had been going out together for a long time.
<b>Hacía dos años que vivíamos en Madrid.</b>	We had been living in Madrid for two years.

Compare the use of **desde**, **desde hacía** and **hacía ... que** with the imperfect with that of **desde**, **desde hace**, and **hace ... que** with the present.

⇒ For more information on the use of tenses with **desde**, see page 189.

#### Key points

- ✓ To form the imperfect tense of **-ar** verbs, take off the **-ar** ending and add the endings: **-aba, -abas, -aba, -ábamos, -abais, -aban**.
- ✓ To form the imperfect tense of **-er** and **-ir** verbs, take off the **-er** and **-ir** endings and add the endings: **-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían**.
- ✓ **ser, ir** and **ver** are irregular in the imperfect.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## The perfect tense

### What is the perfect tense?

The **perfect tense** is a verb form used to talk about what has or hasn't happened; for example, *I've broken my glasses; We haven't spoken about it.*

#### 1 Using the perfect tense

- In English, we use the perfect tense (*have, has* or their shortened forms *'ve* and *'s* followed by a past participle such as *spoken, eaten, lived, been*) to talk about what has or hasn't happened today, this week, this year or in our lives up to now.
- The Spanish perfect tense is used in a similar way.

<b>He terminado el libro.</b>	I've finished the book.
<b>¿Has fregado el suelo?</b>	Have you washed the floor?
<b>Nunca ha estado en Bolivia.</b>	He's never been to Bolivia.
<b>Ha vendido su caballo.</b>	She has sold her horse.
<b>Todavía no hemos comprado un ordenador.</b>	We still haven't bought a computer.
<b>Ya se han ido.</b>	They've already left.

#### Grammar Extra!

You may also come across uses of the perfect tense in Spanish to talk about actions completed in the very recent past. In English, we'd use the past simple tense in such cases.

**¿Lo has visto?** Did you see that?

#### 2 Forming the perfect tense

- As in English, the perfect tense in Spanish has two parts to it. These are:
- the **present** tense of the verb **haber** (meaning *to have*)
  - a part of the main verb called the **past participle**.

#### 3 Forming the past participle

- To form the past participle of regular **-ar** verbs, take off the **-ar** ending of the infinitive and add **-ado**.
- hablar** (to speak) → **hablado** (spoken)
- To form the past participle of regular **-er** or **-ir** verbs, take off the **-er** or **-ir** ending of the infinitive and add **-ido**.
- comer** (to eat) → **comido** (eaten)
- vivir** (to live) → **vivido** (lived)



#### 4 The perfect tense of some regular verbs

- The following table shows how you can combine the present tense of **haber** with the past participle of any verb to form the perfect tense. In this case, the past participles are taken from the following regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*); **trabajar** (meaning *to work*); **comer** (meaning *to eat*); **vender** (meaning *to sell*); **vivir** (meaning *to live*); **decidir** (meaning *to decide*).

	Present of <b>haber</b>	Past participle	Meaning
(yo)	he	hablado	I have spoken
(tú)	has	trabajado	you have worked
(él/ella/usted)	ha	comido	he/she/it has eaten, you have eaten
(nosotros/nosotras)	hemos	vendido	we have sold
(vosotros/vosotras)	habéis	vivido	you have lived
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	han	decidido	they/you have decided

**Has trabajado mucho.**

You've worked hard.

**No he comido nada.**

I haven't eaten anything.

- ⚠ Note that you should not confuse **haber** with **tener**. Even though they both mean *to have*, **haber** is only used for forming tenses and in certain impersonal expressions such as **hay** and **había** meaning *there is, there are, there was, there were*, and so on.

➡ For further information on *Impersonal verbs*, see page 129.

#### 5 Verbs with irregular past participles

- Some past participles are irregular. There aren't too many, so try to learn them.

<b>abrir</b> (to open)	→	<b>abierto</b> (opened)
<b>cubrir</b> (to cover)	→	<b>cubierto</b> (covered)
<b>decir</b> (to say)	→	<b>dicho</b> (said)
<b>escribir</b> (to write)	→	<b>escrito</b> (written)
<b>freír</b> (to fry)	→	<b>frito</b> (fried)
<b>hacer</b> (to do, to make)	→	<b>hecho</b> (done, made)
<b>morir</b> (to die)	→	<b>muerto</b> (died)
<b>oír</b> (to hear)	→	<b>oído</b> (heard)
<b>poner</b> (to put)	→	<b>puesto</b> (put)

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

<b>romper</b> (to break)	→	<b>roto</b> (broken)
<b>ver</b> (to see)	→	<b>visto</b> (seen)
<b>volver</b> (to return)	→	<b>vuelto</b> (returned)

<b>He abierto una cuenta en el banco.</b>	I've opened a bank account.
<b>No ha dicho nada.</b>	He hasn't said anything.
<b>Hoy he hecho muchas cosas.</b>	I've done a lot today.
<b>Todavía no he hecho los deberes.</b>	I haven't done my homework yet.
<b>Han muerto tres personas.</b>	Three people have died.
<b>¿Dónde has puesto mis zapatos?</b>	Where have you put my shoes?
<b>Carlos ha roto el espejo.</b>	Carlos has broken the mirror.
<b>Jamás he visto una cosa parecida.</b>	I've never seen anything like it.
<b>¿Ha vuelto Ana?</b>	Has Ana come back?

#### Típ

**he/has/ha** and so on must **NEVER** be separated from the past participle. Any object pronouns go before the form of **haber** being used, and **NOT** between the form of **haber** and the past participle.

<b>No lo he visto.</b>	I haven't seen it.
<b>¿Lo has hecho ya?</b>	Have you done it yet?

#### 6 Reflexive verbs in the perfect tense

- The perfect tense of reflexive verbs is formed in the same way as for ordinary verbs. The reflexive pronouns (**me, te, se, nos, os, se**) come before **he, has, ha**, and so on. The table on the next page shows the perfect tense of **lavarse** in full.



(Subject pronoun)	Reflexive pronoun	Present tense of <b>haber</b>	Past Participle	Meaning
(yo)	me	he	lavado	I have washed
(tú)	te	has	lavado	you have washed
(él) (ella) (uno)	se	ha	lavado	he has washed she has washed one has washed it has washed
(usted)				you have washed
(nosotros) (nosotras)	nos	hemos	lavado	we have washed we have washed
(vosotros) (vosotras)	os	habéis	lavado	you have washed you have washed
(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)	se	han	lavado	they have washed they have washed you have washed

### Grammar Extra!

Don't use the perfect tense with **desde**, **desde hace** and **hace ... que** when talking about how long something has been going on for. Use the present tense instead.

**Está enfermo desde julio.**

He has been ill since July.

**Conduce ese coche desde hace tres meses.**

He has been driving that car for three months.

**Hace mucho tiempo que salen juntos.**

They have been going out together for a long time.

⇒ For more information on the *Present tense*, see page 72.

► In European Spanish you CAN use the perfect tense in the negative with **desde** and **desde hace**.

**No lo he visto desde hace mucho tiempo.**

I haven't seen him for a long time.

### Key points

- ✓ The Spanish perfect tense is formed using the present tense of **haber** and a past participle.
- ✓ In Spanish, the perfect tense is used very much as it is in English.
- ✓ The past participle of regular **-ar** verbs ends in **-ado**, and the past participle of regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs ends in **-ido**.
- ✓ Make sure you know the following irregular past participle forms: **abierto**, **cubierto**, **dicho**, **escrito**, **frito**, **hecho**, **muerto**, **puesto**, **roto**, **visto**, **vuelto**.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## The pluperfect or past perfect tense

### What is the pluperfect tense?

The **pluperfect** is a verb tense that is used to talk about what had happened or had been true at a point in the past, for example, *I'd forgotten to finish my homework*.

### 1 Using the pluperfect tense

► When talking about the past, we sometimes refer to things that had happened previously. In English, we often use *had* followed by a past participle such as *spoken*, *eaten*, *lived* or *been* to do this. This tense is known as the pluperfect or past perfect tense.

► The Spanish pluperfect tense is used and formed in a similar way.

**Ya habíamos comido cuando llegó.** We'd already eaten when he arrived.

**Nunca lo había visto antes de aquella noche.** I'd never seen it before that night.

### 2 Forming the pluperfect tense

► Like the perfect tense, the pluperfect tense in Spanish has two parts to it:

- the imperfect tense of the verb **haber** (meaning *to have*)
- the past participle.

⇒ For more information on the *Imperfect tense* and *Past participles*, see pages 110 and 115.

► The table below shows how you can combine the imperfect tense of **haber** with the past participle of any verb to form the pluperfect tense. Here, the past participles are taken from the following regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*); **trabajar** (meaning *to work*); **comer** (meaning *to eat*); **vender** (meaning *to sell*); **vivir** (meaning *to live*); **decidir** (meaning *to decide*).

(Subject pronoun)	Imperfect of <b>haber</b>	Past Participle	Meaning
(yo)	había	hablado	I had spoken
(tú)	habías	trabajado	you had worked
(él/ella/usted)	había	comido	he/she/it/you had eaten
(nosotros/nosotras)	habíamos	vendido	we had sold
(vosotros/vosotras)	habíais	vivido	you had lived
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	habían	decidido	they/you had decided

**No había trabajado antes.**

He hadn't worked before.

**Había vendido su caballo.**

She had sold her horse.



► Remember that some very common verbs have irregular past participles.

<b>abrir</b> (to open)	→	<b>abierto</b> (opened)
<b>cubrir</b> (to cover)	→	<b>cubierto</b> (covered)
<b>decir</b> (to say)	→	<b>dicho</b> (said)
<b>escribir</b> (to write)	→	<b>escrito</b> (written)
<b>freír</b> (to fry)	→	<b>frito</b> (fried)
<b>hacer</b> (to do, to make)	→	<b>hecho</b> (done, made)
<b>morir</b> (to die)	→	<b>muerto</b> (died)
<b>oír</b> (to hear)	→	<b>oído</b> (heard)
<b>poner</b> (to put)	→	<b>puesto</b> (put)
<b>romper</b> (to break)	→	<b>roto</b> (broken)
<b>ver</b> (to see)	→	<b>visto</b> (seen)
<b>volver</b> (to return)	→	<b>vuelto</b> (returned)

**No había dicho nada.** He hadn't said anything.  
**Tres personas habían muerto.** Three people had died.

### Típ

**había/habías/habían** and so on must **NEVER** be separated from the past participle. Any object pronouns go before the form of **haber** being used, and **NOT** between the form of **haber** and the past participle.

**No lo había visto.** I hadn't seen it.

### 3 Reflexive verbs in the pluperfect tense

► The pluperfect tense of reflexive verbs is formed in the same way as for ordinary verbs. The reflexive pronouns (**me, te, se, nos, os, se**) come before **había, habías, había,** and so on. The table on the next page shows the pluperfect tense of **lavarse** in full.

(Subject pronoun)	Reflexive pronoun	Imperfect tense of haber	Past Participle	Meaning
(yo)	me	había	lavado	I had washed
(tú)	te	habías	lavado	you had washed
(él) (ella) (uno)	se	había	lavado	he had washed she had washed one had washed
(usted)				it had washed you had washed
(nosotros) (nosotras)	nos	habíamos	lavado	we had washed we had washed
(vosotros) (vosotras)	os	habíais	lavado	you had washed you had washed
(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)	se	habían	lavado	they had washed they had washed you had washed

### Grammar Extra!

Don't use the pluperfect with **desde, desde hacía** and **hacia ... que** when talking about how long something had been going on for. Use the **imperfect** instead.

<b>Estaba enfermo desde 2000.</b>	He had been ill since 2000.
<b>Conducía ese coche desde hacía tres meses.</b>	He had been driving that car for three months.
<b>Hacia mucho tiempo que salían juntos.</b>	They had been going out together for a long time.

➔ For more information on the **Imperfect tense**, see page 110.

In European Spanish you **CAN** use the pluperfect tense in the negative with **desde** and **desde hacía**.

**No lo había visto desde hacía mucho tiempo.** I hadn't seen him for a long time.

### Key points

- ✓ The Spanish pluperfect tense is formed using the imperfect tense of **haber** and a past participle.
- ✓ In Spanish, the pluperfect tense is used very much as it is in English.
- ✓ The past participle of regular **-ar** verbs ends in **-ado**, while that of regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs ends in **-ido**.
- ✓ Make sure you know the irregular forms: **abierto, cubierto, dicho, escrito, frito, hecho, muerto, puesto, roto, visto, vuelto**.



## The passive

### What is the passive?

The **passive** is a verb form that is used when the subject of the verb is the person or thing that is affected by the action, for example, *Mary is liked by everyone*; *Two children were hurt in an accident*; *The house was sold*.

### 1 Using the passive

- Verbs can be either **active** or **passive**.
- In a normal or **active** sentence, the subject of the verb is the person or thing doing the action described by the verb. The object of the verb is the person or thing that the verb most directly affects.

Peter (*subject*) wrote (*active verb*) a letter (*object*).

Ryan (*subject*) hit (*active verb*) me (*object*).

- Provided the verb has an object, in English, as in Spanish, you can turn an **active** sentence round to make it a **passive** sentence by using *to be* followed by a past participle. In this case the person or thing directly affected by the action becomes the subject of the verb.

A letter (*subject*) was written (*passive verb*).

I (*subject*) was hit (*passive verb*).

- To show who or what is responsible for the action in a passive construction, in English you use *by*.

I (*subject*) was hit (*passive verb*) **by** Ryan.

- You use the passive rather than the active when you want to focus attention on the person or thing **affected by** the action rather than the person or thing that carries it out.

**John** was injured in an accident.

- You can also use the passive when you don't know who is responsible for the action.

Several buses were vandalized.

### 2 Forming the passive

- In English we use the verb *to be* with a **past participle** (*was painted, were seen, are made*) to form the passive. In Spanish, the passive is formed in exactly the same way, using the verb **ser** (meaning *to be*) and a **past participle**. When you say who the action is or was done by, you use the preposition **por** (meaning *by*).

⇒ For more information on the **Past participle**, see page 115.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

**Son fabricados en España.**

**Es hecho a mano.**

**Fue escrito por JK Rowling.**

**La casa fue construida en 1956.**

**El cuadro fue pintado por mi padre.**

**El colegio va a ser modernizado.**

They're made in Spain.

It's made by hand.

It was written by JK Rowling.

The house was built in 1956.

The picture was painted by my father.

The school is going to be modernized.

- ☑ Note that the ending of the past participle agrees with the subject of the verb **ser** in exactly the same way as an adjective would.

⇒ For more information on **Adjectives**, see page 19.

- Here is the preterite of the **-ar** verb **enviar** (meaning *to send*) in its passive form.

(Subject pronoun)	Preterite of <b>ser</b>	Past Participle	Meaning
(yo)	<b>fui</b>	<b>enviado</b> (masculine) <b>enviada</b> (feminine)	I was sent
(tú)	<b>fuiste</b>	<b>enviado</b> (masculine) <b>enviada</b> (feminine)	you were sent
(él) (ella) (usted)	<b>fue</b>	<b>enviado</b> <b>enviada</b> (masculine) <b>enviada</b> (feminine)	he was sent she was sent you were sent
(nosotros) (nosotras)	<b>fuimos</b> <b>fuimos</b>	<b>enviados</b> <b>enviadas</b>	we were sent we were sent
(vosotros) (vosotras)	<b>fuisteis</b>	<b>enviados</b> <b>enviadas</b>	you were sent you were sent
(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)	<b>fueron</b>	<b>enviados</b> <b>enviadas</b> (masculine) <b>enviadas</b> (feminine)	they were sent they were sent you were sent you were sent

- You can form other tenses in the passive by changing the tense of the verb **ser**.

Future: **serán enviados** they will be sent.

Perfect: **han sido enviados** they have been sent.

- Irregular past participles are the same as they are in the perfect tense.

⇒ For more information on **Irregular past participles**, see page 116.



### 3 Avoiding the passive

► Passives are not as common in Spanish as they are in English. Spanish native speakers usually prefer to avoid using the passive by:

- using the active construction instead of the passive

**La policía interrogó al sospechoso.**

The suspect was interrogated by the police.

**Su madre le regaló un libro.**

He was given a book by his mother.

- using an active verb in the third person plural

**Ponen demasiados anuncios en la televisión.**

Too many adverts are shown on television.

- using a reflexive construction (as long as you don't need to say who the action is done by)

**Se fabrican en España.**

They're made in Spain.

**Se hace a mano.**

It's made by hand.

**La casa se construyó en 1956.**

The house was built in 1956.

**Todos los libros se han vendido.** All the books have been sold.

⇒ For more information on *Reflexive verbs*, see page 91.

- using an impersonal *se* construction

**Se cree que va a morir.**

It is thought he will die.

⇒ For more information on the impersonal *se* construction, see page 133.

### Típ

Active verbs often have both a direct object and an indirect object.

He gave me (*indirect object*) a book (*direct object*).

In English, both of these objects can be made the subject of a passive verb; *I was given a book.* or *A book was given to me.*

In Spanish, an indirect object can **NEVER** become the subject of a passive verb.

### Key points

- ✓ The passive is formed using **ser** + past participle, sometimes followed by **por** (meaning *by*).
- ✓ The past participle must agree with the subject of **ser**.
- ✓ Passive constructions are not as common as they are in English. You can often avoid the passive by using the third person plural of the active verb or by using a reflexive construction.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## The gerund

### What is a gerund?

The **gerund** is a verb form ending in *-ing* which is used to form verb tenses, and which in English may also be used as an adjective and a noun, for example, *What are you doing?*; *the setting sun*; *Swimming is easy!*

### 1 Using the gerund

► In Spanish, the gerund is a form of the verb that usually ends in **-ando** or **-iendo** and is used to form continuous tenses.

**Estoy trabajando.**

I'm working.

**Estamos comiendo.**

We are eating.

► It is used with **estar** to form continuous tenses such as:

- the present continuous

**Está fregando los platos.**

He's washing the dishes.

**Estoy escribiendo una carta.**

I'm writing a letter.

⇒ For more information on the *Present continuous*, see page 84.

- the imperfect continuous

**Estaba reparando el coche.**

She was fixing the car.

**Estaban esperándonos.**

They were waiting for us.

⚠ Note that continuous tenses should only be used in Spanish to describe action that is or was happening at the precise moment you are talking about.

### Grammar Extra!

Sometimes another verb, such as **ir** or **venir** is used instead of **estar** with a gerund in continuous tenses. These verbs emphasize the gradualness or the slowness of the process.

**Iba anocheciendo.**

It was getting dark.

**Eso lo vengo diciendo desde hace tiempo.**

That's what I've been saying all along.

► The gerund is also used after certain other verbs:

- **seguir haciendo algo** and **continuar haciendo algo** are both used with the meaning of *to go on doing something* or *to continue doing something*.

**Siguió cantando** or **Continuó cantando.**

He went on singing or He continued singing.

**Siguieron leyendo** or **Continuaron leyendo.**

They went on reading or They continued reading.



- **llevar** with a time expression followed by the gerund is used to talk about how long someone has been doing something:

**Lleva dos años estudiando inglés.** He's been studying English for two years.

**Llevo una hora esperando aquí.** I've been waiting here for an hour.

**[i]** Note that the present tense of **llevar** followed by a gerund means the same as the English *have/has been + -ing*.

- **pasar(se)** with a time expression followed by the gerund is used to talk about how long you've spent doing something.

**Pasé or Me pasé el fin de semana estudiando.** I spent the weekend studying.

**Pasamos or Nos pasamos el día leyendo.** We spent the day reading.

- Verbs of movement, such as **salir** (meaning *to come out* or *to go out*), **entrar** (meaning *to come in* or *to go in*), and **irse** (meaning *to leave*) are sometimes followed by a gerund such as **corriendo** (meaning *running*) or **cojeando** (meaning *limping*). The English equivalent of **salir corriendo**, **entrar corriendo** or **irse cojeando**, would be *to run out*, *to run in* or *to limp off* in such cases.

**Salió corriendo.** He ran out.

**Se fue cojeando.** He limped off.

### Típ

Use a past participle not a gerund to talk about physical position.

**Estaba tumbado en el sofá.** He was lying on the sofa.

**Estaba sentada.** She was sitting down.

**Lo encontré tendido en el suelo.** I found him lying on the floor.

**La escalera estaba apoyada contra la pared.** The ladder was leaning against the wall.

⇒ For more information on the *Past participles*, see page 115.

- You will also come across the gerund used in other ways. For example:

**Los vimos jugando al fútbol.** We saw them playing football.

**Estudiando, aprobarás.** By studying, or If you study, you'll pass.

## 2 Forming the gerund of regular verbs

- To form the gerund of regular **-ar** verbs, take off the **-ar** ending of the infinitive to form the stem, and add **-ando**.

Infinitive	Stem	Gerund
hablar	habl-	hablando
trabajar	trabaj-	trabajando

- To form the gerund of regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs, take off the **-er** and **-ir** ending of the infinitive to form the stem, and add **-iendo**.

Infinitive	Stem	Gerund
comer	com-	comiendo
vivir	viv-	viviendo

## 3 The gerund of irregular verbs

- Some verbs have an irregular gerund form. You have to learn these.

Infinitives	Meaning	Gerund	Meaning
decir	to say	diciendo	saying
dormir	to sleep	durmiendo	sleeping
freír	to fry	friendo	frying
morir	to die	muriendo	dying
pedir	to ask for	pidiendo	asking for
poder	to be able to	pudiendo	being able to
reír	to laugh	riendo	laughing
seguir	to follow	siguiendo	following
sentir	to feel	sintiendo	feeling
venir	to come	viniendo	coming
vestir	to dress	vistiendo	dressing

- In the next group of verbs there is a **y** rather than the normal **i**.

Infinitives	Meaning	Gerund	Meaning
caer	to fall	cayendo	falling
creer	to believe	creyendo	believing
leer	to read	leyendo	reading
oír	to hear	oyendo	hearing
traer	to bring	trayendo	bringing
ir	to go	yendo	going



**Típ**

In English, we often use *-ing* forms as adjectives, for example, *running water, shining eyes, the following day*. In Spanish, you cannot use the **-ando** and **-iendo** forms like this.

Instead, there are sometimes corresponding forms ending in **-ante** and **-iente** that can be used as adjectives.

<b>agua corriente</b>	running water
<b>ojos brillantes</b>	shining eyes
<b>Al día siguiente, visitamos Toledo.</b>	The following day we visited Toledo.

Similarly, in English, we often use the *-ing* forms as nouns. In Spanish you have to use the infinitive instead.

**Fumar es malo para la salud.** Smoking is bad for you.

**4 Position of pronouns with the gerund**

- Object pronouns and reflexive pronouns are usually attached to the end of the gerund, although you can also often put them before **estar** in continuous tenses.

**Estoy hablándote** or **Te estoy hablando.** I'm talking to you.

**Está vistiéndose** or **Se está vistiendo.** He's getting dressed.

**Estaban mostrárselo** or **Se lo estaban mostrando.** They were showing it to him/her/them/you.

- ⓘ Note that you will always have to add an accent to keep the stress in the same place when adding pronouns to the end of a gerund.

⇒ For more information on **Stress**, see page 200.

**Key points**

- ✓ Use the gerund in continuous tenses with **estar** as well as after **seguir** and **continuar**.
- ✓ Gerunds for **-ar** verbs add **-ando** to the stem of the verb.
- ✓ Gerunds for **-er** and **-ir** verbs usually add **-iendo** to the stem of the verb.
- ✓ **-ando** and **-iendo** gerunds cannot be used as adjectives or nouns.
- ✓ You can attach pronouns to the end of the gerund, or sometimes put them before the previous verb.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

**Impersonal verbs****What is an impersonal verb?**

An **impersonal verb** is a verb whose subject is *it*, but this '*it*' does not refer to any specific thing; for example, *It's going to rain; It's nine o'clock.*

**1 Verbs that are always used impersonally**

- There are some verbs such as **llover** (meaning *to rain*) and **nevar** (meaning *to snow*), that are only used in the '*it*' form, the infinitive, and as a gerund (the *-ing* form of the verb). These are called **impersonal verbs** because there is no person, animal or thing performing the action.

<b>Llueve.</b>	It's raining.
<b>Está lloviendo.</b>	It's raining.
<b>Va a llover.</b>	It's going to rain.
<b>Nieva.</b>	It's snowing.
<b>Está nevando.</b>	It's snowing.
<b>Nevaba.</b>	It was snowing.
<b>Estaba nevando.</b>	It was snowing.
<b>Mañana nevará.</b>	It will snow tomorrow.

**2 Verbs that are sometimes used impersonally**

- There are also some other very common verbs that are sometimes used as impersonal verbs, for example **hacer**, **haber** and **ser**.
- **hacer** is used in a number of impersonal expressions relating to the weather:

<b>Hace frío/calor.</b>	It's cold/hot.
<b>Ayer hacía mucho frío/calor.</b>	It was very cold/hot yesterday.
<b>Hace sol/viento.</b>	It's sunny/windy.
<b>Va a hacer sol/viento.</b>	It's going to be sunny/windy.
<b>Hace un tiempo estupendo/horrible.</b>	It's a lovely/horrible day.

- **hacer** is also used in combination with **que** and **desde** in impersonal time expressions, to talk about how long something has been going on for or how long it is since something happened.

**Hace seis meses que vivo aquí.** I've been living here for six months.  
or **Vivo aquí desde hace seis meses.**



**Hace tres años que estudio español** or **Estudio español desde hace tres años.**

I've been studying Spanish for three years.

**Hace mucho tiempo que no la veo** or **No la veo desde hace mucho tiempo.**

I haven't seen her for ages or It is ages since I saw her.

**Hace varias semanas que no voy por allí** or **No voy por allí desde hace varias semanas.**

I haven't been there for several weeks or It is several weeks since I went there.

Ⓩ Note the use of the present simple in Spanish in the above examples where in English we'd use the perfect tense or the past tense.

► **hacer** is also used impersonally in the expression (**me/te/le**) **hace falta**, which means *it is necessary (for me/you/him)*.

**Si hace falta, voy.**

I'll go if necessary.

**No hace falta llamar.**

We/You/I needn't call.

**Me hace falta otro vaso más.**

I need another glass.

**No hace falta ser un experto.**

You don't need to be an expert.

**No hacía falta.**

It wasn't necessary.

Ⓩ Note that not all impersonal expressions in Spanish are translated into English using impersonal expressions.

► **haber** too can be used impersonally with the meaning *there is/there are, there was/there were, there will be*, and so on. It has the special form **hay** in the present. For the other tenses, you take the third person singular (the 'it' form) of **haber** in the appropriate tense.

**Hay un cine cerca de aquí.**

There's a cinema near here.

**Hay dos supermercados.**

There are two supermarkets.

**No hay bares.**

There are no bars.

**Había mucho ruido.**

There was a lot of noise.

**Había muchos coches.**

There were a lot of cars

**Hubo un accidente.**

There was an accident.

**Hubo varios problemas.**

There were several problems.

**¿Habrà tiempo?**

Will there be time?

**¿Habrà suficientes sillas?**

Will there be enough chairs?

Ⓩ Note that you should ALWAYS use the singular form (never the plural), no matter how many things there are.

► **haber** is used in the construction **hay que** with an infinitive to talk about actions that need to be taken.

**Hay que trabajar más.**

We/You need to work harder.

**Hay que ser respetuoso.**

You/We/One must be respectful.

**Habrà que decirselo.**

We'll/You'll have to tell him.

► **ser** can be used in certain impersonal constructions with adjectives, for example:

• **es/era/fue** + adjective + infinitive

**Es importante ahorrar dinero.**

It's important to save money.

**Fue torpe hacer eso.**

It was silly to do that.

**Sería mejor esperar.**

It would be better to wait.

• **es/era/fue** + adjective + **que** + verb

**Es cierto que tengo problemas.**

It's true that I've got problems.

**Es verdad que trabaja mucho.**

It's true that he works hard.

Ⓩ Note that when they are used in the negative (**no es cierto que...; no es verdad que...**), these expressions have to be followed by the subjunctive.

⇒ For more information on the **Subjunctive**, see page 134.

### Grammar Extra!

When impersonal expressions that don't state facts are followed by **que** (meaning *that*) and a verb, this verb must be in the subjunctive.

For this reason, the following non-factual impersonal expressions are all followed by the subjunctive:

• **Es posible que...**

It's possible that ... / ...might...

**Es posible que ganen.**

They might win.

• **Es imposible que...**

It's impossible that... / ...can't possibly...

**Es imposible que lo sepan.**

They can't possibly know.

• **Es necesario que...**

It's necessary that.../ ...need to...

**No es necesario que vengas.**

You don't need to come.

• **Es mejor que...**

... be better to ...

**Es mejor que lo pongas aquí.**

You'd be better to put it here.

⇒ For more information on the **Subjunctive**, see page 134.



► **ser** is also used impersonally with **de día** and **de noche** to say whether it's day or night.

**Era de noche cuando llegamos.** It was night when we arrived.  
**Todavía es de día allí.** It's still day there.

⇒ For other time expressions with **ser**, see page 80.

► **basta con** is used impersonally:

- with a following **infinitive** to mean *it's enough to/all you need do is*

**Basta con telefonar para reservar un asiento.** All you need do is to phone to reserve a seat.

**Basta con dar una vuelta por la ciudad para...** You only need to take a walk round the city to ...

- with a **noun** or **pronoun** to mean *all you need is or all it takes is*

**Basta con un error para que todo se estropee.** All it takes is one mistake to ruin everything.

► **(me) parece que** is used to give opinions.

**Parece que va a llover.** It looks as if it's going to rain.

**Me parece que estás equivocado.** I think that you are wrong.

ⓘ Note that when **(me) parece que** is used in the negative, the following verb has to be in the **subjunctive**.

⇒ For more information on the **Subjunctive**, see page 134.

► **vale la pena** is used to talk about what's worth doing.

**Vale la pena.** It's worth it.

**No vale la pena.** It's not worth it.

**Vale la pena hacer el esfuerzo.** It's worth making the effort.

**No vale la pena gastar tanto dinero.** It's not worth spending so much money.

### Grammar Extra!

**se** is often used in impersonal expressions, especially with the verbs **creer**, **decir**, **poder**, and **tratar**. In such cases it often corresponds to *it*, *one* or *you* in English.

- **Se cree que...** It is thought or People think that...
- **Se cree que es un mito.** It is thought to be a myth.
- **Se dice que...** It is said or People say that...
- **Se dice que es rico.** He is said to be rich.
- **Se puede...** One can.../People can.../You can...
- **Aquí se puede aparcar.** One can park here.
- **Se trata de...** It's a question of .../It's about ...
- **No se trata de dinero.** It isn't a question of money.
- **Se trata de resolverlo.** We must solve it.

⇒ For more information on **Reflexive verbs**, see page 91.

#### Key points

- ✓ Impersonal verbs and expressions can only be used in the 'it' form, the infinitive and the gerund.
- ✓ Impersonal expressions relating to the weather are very common.
- ✓ Although in English we use *there is* or *there are* depending on the number of people or things that there are, in Spanish **hay**, **había**, **hubo** and so on are used in the singular form only.
- ✓ Some very common ordinary verbs are also used as impersonal verbs.



## The subjunctive

### What is the subjunctive?

The **subjunctive** is a verb form that is used in certain circumstances especially when expressing some sort of feeling or when there is doubt about whether something will happen or whether something is true. It is only used occasionally in modern English, for example, *If I were you, ...; So be it.; I wish you were here.*

### 1 Using the subjunctive

- ▶ Although you may not know it, you will already be familiar with many of the forms of the present subjunctive, as it is used when giving orders and instructions not to do something as well as in the **usted**, **ustedes** and **nosotros** forms of instructions to do something. For example, if you phone someone in Spain, they will probably answer with **¡diga!** or **¡dígame!**, an imperative form taken from the present subjunctive of **decir**.

⇒ For more information on **Imperatives**, see page 85.

- ▶ In Spanish the subjunctive is used after certain verbs and conjunctions when two parts of a sentence have different subjects.

**Tengo miedo de que le ocurra algo.** I'm afraid something may (*subjunctive*) happen to him.

(The subject of the first part of the sentence is *I*; the subject of the second part of the sentence is *something*.)

- ▶ In English, in a sentence like *We want him/José to be happy*, we use an infinitive (*to be*) for the second verb even though *want* and *be happy* have different subjects (*we* and *him/José*).
- ▶ In Spanish you cannot do this. You have to use the **subjunctive** for the second verb.

**Queremos que él sea feliz.** We want that he (*subjunctive*) be happy.

**Queremos que José sea feliz.** We want that José (*subjunctive*) be happy.

- ▶ You **CAN** use an infinitive for the second verb in Spanish when the subject of both verbs is the same.

**Queremos ser felices.** We want to be happy.

### 2 Coming across the subjunctive

- ▶ The subjunctive has several tenses, the main ones being the **present subjunctive** and the **imperfect subjunctive**. The tense used for the subjunctive verb depends on the tense of the previous verb.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

⇒ For more information on **Tenses with the subjunctive**, see page 139.

- ▶ In sentences containing two verbs with different subjects, you will find that the second verb is in the subjunctive when the first verb:

- expresses a wish
  - Quiero que vengan.** I want them to come.
  - Quiero que se vaya.** I want him/her to go away.
  - Deseamos que tengan éxito.** We want them to be successful.
- expresses an emotion
  - Siento mucho que no puedas venir.** I'm very sorry that you can't come.
  - Espero que venga.** I hope he comes.
  - Me sorprende que no esté aquí.** I'm surprised that he isn't here.
  - Me alegro de que te gusten.** I'm pleased that you like them.

- ▶ If the subject of both verbs is the **same**, an infinitive is used as the second verb instead of a subjunctive.

- ▶ Compare the following examples. In the examples on the left, both the verb expressing the wish or emotion and the second verb have the same subject, so the second verb is an **infinitive**. In the examples on the right, each verb has a different subject, so the second verb is in the **subjunctive**.

Infinitive construction	Subjunctive construction
<b>Quiero estudiar.</b> I want to study.	<b>Quiero que José estudie.</b> I want José to study.
<b>Maite quiere irse.</b> Maite wants to leave.	<b>Maite quiere que me vaya.</b> Maite wants me to leave.
<b>Siento no poder venir.</b> I'm sorry I can't come.	<b>Siento que no puedas venir.</b> I'm sorry that you can't come.
<b>Me alegro de poder ayudar.</b> I'm pleased to be able to help.	<b>Me alegro de que puedas ayudar.</b> I'm pleased you can help.

- ▶ You will also come across the verb + **que** + subjunctive construction (often with a personal object such as **me**, **te** and so on) when the first verb is one you use to ask or advise somebody to do something.

**Sólo te pido que tengas** I'm only asking you to be careful.

**cuidado.**

**Te aconsejo que no llegues** I'd advise you not to be late.

**tarde.**



► You will also come across the subjunctive in the following cases:

- after verbs expressing doubt or uncertainty, and verbs saying what you think about something that are used with **no**

**Dudo que tenga tiempo.** I doubt I'll have time.

**No creo que venga.** I don't think she'll come.

**No pienso que esté bien.** I don't think it's right.

- in impersonal constructions that show a need to do something

**¿Hace falta que vaya Jaime?** Does Jaime need to go?

**No es necesario que vengas.** You don't need to come.

- in impersonal constructions that do not express facts

**Es posible que tengan razón.** They may be right.

⇒ For more information on *Impersonal verbs*, see page 129.

### Grammar Extra!

Use the **indicative** (that is, any verb form that isn't subjunctive) after impersonal expressions that state facts provided they are **NOT** in the negative.

**Es verdad que es interesante.** It's true that it's interesting.

**Es cierto que me gusta el café.** It's true I like coffee.

**Parece que se va a ir.** It seems that he's going to go.

► The subjunctive is used after **que** to express wishes.

**¡Que lo pases bien!** Have a good time!

**¡Que te diviertas!** Have fun!

► The subjunctive is also used after certain conjunctions linking two parts of a sentence which each have different subjects.

- **antes de que** before
- **¿Quieres decirle algo antes de que se vaya?** Do you want to say anything to him before he goes?
- **para que** so that
- **Es para que te acuerdes de mí.** It's so that you'll remember me.
- **sin que** without
- **Salimos sin que nos vieran.** We left without them seeing us.

⇒ For more information on *Conjunctions*, see page 192.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

### Tip

Use **para**, **sin** and **antes de** with the **infinitive** when the subject of both verbs is the **same**.

**Fue en taxi para no llegar tarde.** He went by taxi so that he wouldn't be late.

**Pedro se ha ido sin esperarnos.** Pedro's gone without waiting for us.

**Cenamos antes de ir al teatro.** We had dinner before we went to the theatre.

### 3 Forming the present subjunctive

► To form the present subjunctive of most verbs, take off the **-o** ending of the **yo** form of the **present simple**, and add a fixed set of endings.

► For **-ar** verbs, the endings are: **-e, -es, -e, -emos, -éis, -en**.

► For both **-er** and **-ir** verbs, the endings are: **-a, -as, -a, -amos, -áis, -an**.

► The following table shows the present subjunctive of three regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
hablar to speak	hable	hables	hable	hablemos	habléis	hablen
comer to eat	coma	comas	coma	comamos	comáis	coman
vivir to live	viva	vivas	viva	vivamos	viváis	vivan

**Quiero que comas algo.** I want you to eat something.

**Me sorprende que no hable inglés.** I'm surprised he doesn't speak English.

**No es verdad que trabajen aquí.** It isn't true that they work here.

► Some verbs have very irregular **yo** forms in the ordinary present tense and these irregular forms are reflected in the stem for the present subjunctive.



Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
decir to say	diga	digas	diga	digamos	digáis	digan
hacer to do/make	haga	hagas	haga	hagamos	hagáis	hagan
poner to put	ponga	pongas	ponga	pongamos	pongáis	pongan
salir to leave	salga	salgas	salga	salgamos	salgáis	salgan
tener to have	tenga	tengas	tenga	tengamos	tengáis	tengan
venir to come	venga	venga	venga	vengamos	vengáis	vengán

**Voy a limpiar la casa antes de que vengan.** I'm going to clean the house before they come.

ⓘ Note that only the **vosotros** form has an accent.

**Tip**

The present subjunctive endings are the opposite of what you'd expect, as **-ar** verbs have endings starting with **-e**, and **-er** and **-ir** verbs have endings starting with **-a**.

**4 Forming the present subjunctive of irregular verbs**

► The following verbs have irregular subjunctive forms:

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
dar to give	dé	des	dé	demos	deis	den
estar to be	esté	estés	esté	estemos	estéis	estén
haber to have	haya	hayas	haya	hayamos	hayáis	hayan
ir to go	vaya	vayas	vaya	vayamos	vayáis	vayan
saber to know	sepa	sepa	sepa	sepamos	sepáis	sepan
ser to be	sea	seas	sea	seamos	seáis	sean

**No quiero que te vayas.** I don't want you to go.  
**Dudo que esté aquí.** I doubt if it's here.  
**No piensan que sea él.** They don't think it's him.  
**Es posible que haya problemas.** There may be problems.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

► Verbs that change their stems (radical-changing verbs) in the ordinary present usually change them in the same way in the present subjunctive.

⇒ For more information on **radical-changing verbs**, see page 76.

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
pensar to think	piense	pienses	piense	pensemos	penséis	piensen
entender to understand	entienda	entiendas	entienda	entendamos	entendáis	entiendan
poder to be able	pueda	puedas	pueda	podamos	podáis	puedan
querer to want	quiera	quieras	quiera	queramos	queráis	quieran
volver to return	vuelva	vuelvas	vuelva	volvamos	volváis	vuelvan

**No hace falta que vuelvas.** There's no need for you to come back.

**Es para que lo entiendas.** It's so that you understand.

**Me alegro de que puedas venir.** I'm pleased you can come.

► Sometimes the stem of the **nosotros** and **vosotros** forms isn't the same as it is in the ordinary present tense.

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
dormir to sleep	duerma	duermas	duerma	durmamos	durmáis	duerman
morir to die	muera	mueras	muera	muramos	muráis	mueran
pedir to ask for	pida	pidas	pida	pidamos	pidáis	pidan
seguir to follow	siga	sigas	siga	sigamos	sigáis	sigan
sentir to feel	sienta	sientas	sienta	sintamos	sintáis	sientan

**Queremos hacerlo antes de que nos muramos.** We want to do it before we die.

**Vendré a veros cuando os sintáis mejor.** I'll come and see you when you feel better.

**5 Tenses with the subjunctive**

► If the verb in the first part of the sentence is in the present, future or imperative, the second verb will usually be in the present subjunctive.

**Quiero (present) que lo hagas (present subjunctive).**

I want you to do it.

**Iremos (future) por aquí para que no nos vean (present subjunctive).**

We'll go this way so that they won't see us.

► If the verb in the first part of the sentence is in the conditional or a past tense, the second verb will usually be in the imperfect subjunctive.



**Me gustaría** (conditional) **que llegaras** (imperfect subjunctive) **temprano**.  
I'd like you to arrive early.

**Les pedí** (preterite) **que me esperaran** (imperfect subjunctive).  
I asked them to wait for me.

## 6 Indicative or subjunctive?

- Many expressions are followed by the **indicative** (the ordinary form of the verb) when they state facts, and by the **subjunctive** when they refer to possible or intended future events and outcomes.
- Certain conjunctions relating to time such as **cuando** (meaning *when*), **hasta que** (meaning *until*), **en cuanto** (meaning *as soon as*) and **mientras** (meaning *while*) are used with the **indicative** when the action has happened or when talking about what happens regularly.

**¿Qué dijo cuando te vio?** What did he say when he saw you?

**Siempre lo compro cuando voy a España.** I always buy it when I go to Spain.

**Me quedé allí hasta que volvió Antonio.** I stayed there until Antonio came back.

- The same conjunctions are followed by the **subjunctive** when talking about a vague future time.

**¿Qué quieres hacer cuando seas mayor?** What do you want to do when you grow up? (*but you're not grown up yet*)

**¿Por qué no te quedas aquí hasta que vuelva Antonio?** Why don't you stay here until Antonio comes back? (*but Antonio hasn't come back yet*)

**Lo haré en cuanto pueda or tan pronto como pueda.** I'll do it as soon as I can. (*but I'm not able to yet*)

## Grammar Extra!

**aunque** is used with the **indicative** (the ordinary verb forms) when it means *although* or *even though*. In this case, the second part of the sentence is stating a fact.

**Me gusta el francés aunque prefiero el alemán.** I like French although I prefer German.

**Seguí andando aunque me dolía la pierna.** I went on walking even though my leg hurt.

**aunque** is used with the **subjunctive** when it means *even if*. Here, the second part of the sentence is not yet a fact.

**Te llamaré cuando vuelva aunque sea tarde.** I'll ring you when I get back, even if it's late.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## 7 Forming the imperfect subjunctive

- For all verbs, there are **two** imperfect subjunctive forms that are exactly the same in meaning.
- The stem for both imperfect subjunctive forms is the same: you take off the **-aron** or **-ieron** ending of the **ellos** form of the preterite and add a fixed set of endings to what is left.

⇒ For more information on the **Preterite**, see page 104.

- For **-ar** verbs, the endings are: **-ara, -aras, -ara, -áramos, -arais, -aran** or **-ase, -ases, -ase, -ásemos, -aseis, -asen**. The first form is more common.
- For **-er** and **-ir** verbs, the endings are: **-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran** or **-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen**. The first form is more common.
- The following table shows the subjunctive of three regular verbs: **hablar** (meaning *to speak*), **comer** (meaning *to eat*) and **vivir** (meaning *to live*).

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
hablar to speak	hablara	hablaras	hablara	habláramos	hablarais	hablaran
	hablase	hablases	hablase	hablásemos	hablaseis	hablasen
comer to eat	comiera	comieras	comiera	comiéramos	comierais	comieran
	comiese	comieses	comiese	comiésemos	comieseis	comiesen
vivir to live	viviera	vivieras	viviera	viviéramos	vivierais	vivieran
	viviese	vivieses	viviese	viviésemos	vivieseis	viviesen



- Many verbs have irregular preterite forms which are reflected in the stem for the imperfect subjunctive. For example:

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
dar to give	diera	dieras	diera	dieramos	dierais	dieran
	diese	dieses	diese	diesemos	dieseis	diesen
estar to be	estuviera	estuvieras	estuviera	estuviéramos	estuvierais	estuvieran
	estuviese	estuvieses	estuviese	estuviésemos	estuvieseis	estuviesen
hacer to do/ make	hiciera	hicieras	hiciera	hiciéramos	hicierais	hicieran
	hiciese	hicieses	hiciese	hiciésemos	hicieseis	hiciesen
poner to put	pusiera	pusieras	pusiera	pusiéramos	pusierais	pusieran
	pusiese	pusieses	pusiese	pusiésemos	pusieseis	pusiesen
tener to have	tuviera	tuvieras	tuviera	tuviéramos	tuvierais	tuvieran
	tuviese	tuvieses	tuviese	tuviésemos	tuvieseis	tuviesen
ser to be	fuera	fueras	fuera	fuéramos	fuerais	fuieran
	fuese	fueses	fuese	fuésemos	fueseis	fuesen
venir to come	viniera	vinieras	viniera	viniéramos	vinierais	vinieran
	viniese	vinieses	viniese	viniésemos	vinieseis	viniesen

### 8 Forming the imperfect subjunctive of some irregular -ir verbs

- In some irregular -ir verbs – the ones that don't have an **i** in the **ellos** form of the preterite – **-era, -eras, -era, -éramos, -erais, -eran** or **-ese, -eses, -ese, -ésemos, -eseis, -esen** are added to the preterite stem instead of **-iera** and **-iese** and so on.

⇒ For more information on the **Preterite**, see page 104.

Infinitive	(yo)	(tú)	(él) (ella) (usted)	(nosotros) (nosotras)	(vosotros) (vosotras)	(ellos) (ellas) (ustedes)
decir to say	dijera	dijeras	dijera	dijéramos	dijerais	dijeran
	dijese	dijeses	dijese	dijésemos	dijeseis	dijesen
ir to go	fuera	fueras	fuera	fuéramos	fuerais	fuieran
	fuese	fueses	fuese	fuésemos	fueseis	fuesen

- 7 Note that the imperfect subjunctive forms of **ir** and **ser** are identical.

**Teníamos miedo de que se fuera.** We were afraid he might leave.

**No era verdad que fueran ellos.** It wasn't true that it was them.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

### 9 Present indicative or imperfect subjunctive after **si**

- Like some other conjunctions, **si** (meaning *if*) is sometimes followed by the ordinary present tense (the **present indicative**) and sometimes by the **imperfect subjunctive**.

- **si** is followed by the **present indicative** when talking about likely possibilities.

**Si quieres, te dejo el coche.**

If you like, I'll lend you the car.  
(and you may well want to borrow the car)

**Compraré un bolígrafo si tienen.**

I'll buy a pen if they have any.  
(and there may well be some pens)

- **si** is followed by the **imperfect subjunctive** when talking about unlikely or impossible conditions.

**Si tuviera más dinero, me lo compraría.**

If I had more money, I'd buy it.  
(but I haven't got more money)

**Si yo fuera tú, lo compraría.**

If I were you, I'd buy it.  
(but I'm not you)

### Tip

You probably need the imperfect subjunctive in Spanish after **si** if the English sentence has *would* in it.

### Key points

- ✓ After certain verbs you have to use a subjunctive in Spanish when there is a different subject in the two parts of the sentence.
- ✓ A subjunctive is also found after impersonal expressions, as well as after certain conjunctions.
- ✓ Structures with the subjunctive can often be avoided if the subject of both verbs is the same. An infinitive can often be used instead.
- ✓ The endings of the present subjunctive in regular **-ar** verbs are: **-e, -es, -emos, -éis, -en**.
- ✓ The endings of the present subjunctive in regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs are: **-a, -as, -a, -amos, -áis, -an**.
- ✓ The endings of the imperfect subjunctive in regular **-ar** verbs are: **-ara, -aras, -áramos, -arais, -aran** or **-ase, -ases, -ase, -ásemos, -aseis, -asen**.
- ✓ The endings of the imperfect subjunctive in regular **-er** and **-ir** verbs are: **-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran** or **-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen**.
- ✓ Some verbs have irregular subjunctive forms.



## The Infinitive

### What is the infinitive?

The **infinitive** is a form of the verb that hasn't had any endings added to it and doesn't relate to any particular tense. In English, the infinitive is usually shown with *to*, as in *to speak*, *to eat*, *to live*.

### 1 Using the infinitive

- ▶ In English, the infinitive is usually thought of as being made up of two words, for example, *to speak*. In Spanish, the infinitive consists of one word and is the verb form that ends in **-ar**, **-er** or **-ir**, for example, **hablar**, **comer**, **vivir**.
- ▶ When you look up a verb in the dictionary, you will find that information is usually listed under the infinitive form.
- ▶ In Spanish, the infinitive is often used in the following ways:
  - after a preposition such as **antes de** (meaning *before*), **después de** (meaning *after*)

**Después de comer, fuimos a casa de Pepe.**

After eating, we went round to Pepe's.

**Salió sin hacer ruido.**

She went out without making a noise.

**Siempre veo la tele antes de acostarme.**

I always watch TV before going to bed.

- ⓘ Note that in English we always use the *-ing* form of the verb after a preposition, for example, *before going*. In Spanish you have to use the **infinitive** form after a preposition.

- in set phrases, particularly after adjectives or nouns

**Estoy encantada de poder ayudarte.**

I'm delighted to be able to help you.

**Está contento de vivir aquí.**

He's happy living here.

**Tengo ganas de salir.**

I feel like going out.

**No hace falta comprar leche.**

We/You don't need to buy any milk.

**Me dio mucha alegría verla.**

I was very pleased to see her.

**Me da miedo cruzar la carretera.**

I'm afraid of crossing the road.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- after another verb, sometimes as the object of it
 

<b>Debo llamar a casa.</b>	I must phone home.
<b>Prefiero esquiar.</b>	I prefer skiing.
<b>Me gusta escuchar música.</b>	I like listening to music.
<b>Nos encanta nadar.</b>	We love swimming.
<b>¿Te apetece ir al cine?</b>	Do you fancy going to the cinema?

- ⓘ Note that, when it comes after another verb, the Spanish infinitive often corresponds to the *-ing* form in English.

- in instructions that are aimed at the general public – for example in cookery books or on signs

**Cocer a fuego lento.**

Cook on a low heat.

**Prohibido pisar el césped.**

Don't walk on the grass.

- as a noun, where in English we would use the *-ing* form of the verb

**Lo importante es intentarlo.**

Trying is the important thing.

- ⓘ Note that, when the infinitive is the subject of another verb, it may have the article **el** before it, particularly if it starts the sentence.

**El viajar tanto me resulta cansado.**

I find so much travelling tiring.

### Túp

Be especially careful when translating the English *-ing* form. It is often translated by the infinitive in Spanish.

### 2 Linking two verbs together

- ▶ There are three ways that verbs can be linked together when the second verb is an infinitive:

- with no linking word in between

**¿Quieres venir?**

Do you want to come?

**Necesito hablar contigo.**

I need to talk to you.

- with a preposition:

**ir a hacer algo**

to be going to do something

**aprender a hacer algo**

to learn to do something

**dejar de hacer algo**

to stop doing something

**Voy a comprarme un móvil.**

I'm going to buy a mobile.

**Aprendimos a esquiar.**

We learnt to ski.

**Quiere dejar de fumar.**

He wants to stop smoking.

- ⓘ Note that you have to learn the preposition required for each verb.



- in set structures
 

<b>tener que hacer algo</b>	to have to do something
<b>Tengo que salir.</b>	I've got to go out.
<b>Tendrías que comer más.</b>	You should eat more.
<b>Tuvo que devolver el dinero.</b>	He had to pay back the money.

### 3 Verbs followed by the infinitive with no preposition

► Some Spanish verbs and groups of verbs can be followed by an infinitive with no preposition:

- **poder** (meaning *to be able to, can, may*), **saber** (meaning *to know how to, can*), **querer** (meaning *to want*) and **deber** (meaning *to have to, must*)

<b>No puede venir.</b>	He can't come.
<b>¿Sabes esquiar?</b>	Can you ski?
<b>Quiere estudiar medicina.</b>	He wants to study medicine.
<b>Debes hacerlo.</b>	You must do it.

- verbs like **gustar**, **encantar** and **apetecer**, where the infinitive is the subject of the verb

<b>Me gusta estudiar.</b>	I like studying.
<b>Nos encanta bailar.</b>	We love dancing.
<b>¿Te apetece ir al cine?</b>	Do you fancy going to the cinema?

- verbs that relate to seeing or hearing, such as **ver** (meaning *to see*) and **oír** (meaning *to hear*)

<b>Nos ha visto llegar.</b>	He saw us arrive.
<b>Te he oído cantar.</b>	I heard you singing.

- the verbs **hacer** (meaning *to make*) and **dejar** (meaning *to let*)

<b>¡No me hagas reír!</b>	Don't make me laugh!
<b>Mis padres no me dejan salir por la noche.</b>	My parents don't let me go out at night.

- the following common verbs

<b>decidir</b>	to decide
<b>desear</b>	to wish, want
<b>esperar</b>	to hope
<b>evitar</b>	to avoid
<b>necesitar</b>	to need
<b>odiar</b>	to hate
<b>olvidar</b>	to forget
<b>pensar</b>	to think
<b>preferir</b>	to prefer
<b>recordar</b>	to remember
<b>sentir</b>	to regret

**Han decidido comprarse una casa.** They've decided to buy a house.

**No desea tener más hijos.** She doesn't want to have any more children.

**Espero poder ir.** I hope to be able to go.

**Evita gastar demasiado dinero.** He avoids spending too much money.

**Necesito salir un momento.** I need to go out for a moment.

**Olvidó dejar su dirección.** She forgot to leave her address.

**Pienso hacer una paella.** I'm thinking of making a paella.

**Siento molestarte.** I'm sorry to bother you.

► Some of these verbs combine with infinitives to make set phrases with a special meaning:

- **querer decir** to mean
- **¿Qué quiere decir eso?** What does that mean?
- **dejar caer** to drop
- **Dejó caer la bandeja.** She dropped the tray.

### 4 Verbs followed by the preposition **a** and the infinitive

► The following verbs are the most common ones that can be followed by **a** and the infinitive:

- verbs relating to movement such as **ir** (meaning *to go*) and **venir** (meaning *to come*)

**Se va a comprar un caballo.** He's going to buy a horse.

**Viene a vernos.** He's coming to see us.



- the following common verbs

**aprender a hacer algo**  
**comenzar a hacer algo**  
**decidirse a hacer algo**  
**empezar a hacer algo**  
**llegar a hacer algo**  
**llegar a ser algo**  
**probar a hacer algo**  
**volver a hacer algo**

**Me gustaría aprender a nadar.**  
**No llego a terminar la carrera.**

**Llegó a ser primer ministro.**  
**No vuelvas a hacerlo nunca más.**

- The following verbs can be followed by **a** and a person's name or else by **a** and a noun or pronoun referring to a person, and then by another **a** and an infinitive.

**ayudar a alguien a hacer algo**  
**enseñar a alguien a hacer algo**  
**invitar a alguien a hacer algo**  
**¿Le podrías ayudar a Antonia a fregar los platos?**  
**Le enseñó a su hermano a nadar.**  
**Los he invitado a tomar unas copas en casa.**

to learn to do something  
 to begin to do something  
 to decide to do something  
 to begin to do something  
 to manage to do something  
 to become something  
 to try to do something  
 to do something again

I'd like to learn to swim.  
 He didn't manage to finish his degree course.

He became prime minister.  
 Don't ever do it again.

to help someone to do something  
 to teach someone to do something  
 to invite someone to do something  
 Could you help Antonia do the dishes?

He taught his brother to swim.  
 I've invited them over for drinks.

### 5 Verbs followed by the preposition **de** and the infinitive

- The following verbs are the most common ones that can be followed by **de** and the infinitive:

**aburrirse de hacer algo**  
**acabar de hacer algo**  
**acordarse de haber hecho/de hacer algo**  
**alegrarse de hacer algo**  
**dejar de hacer algo**  
**tener ganas de hacer algo**  
**tratar de hacer algo**

to get bored with doing something  
 to have just done something  
 to remember having done/doing something  
 to be glad to do something  
 to stop doing something  
 to want to do something  
 to try to do something

**Me aburría de no poder salir de casa.**

**Acabo de comprar un móvil.**

**Acababan de llegar cuando...**

**Me alegro de verte.**

**¿Quieres dejar de hablar?**

**Tengo ganas de volver a España.**

I was getting bored with not being able to leave the house.

I've just bought a mobile.

They had just arrived when...

I'm glad to see you.

Will you stop talking?

I want to go back to Spain.

### 6 Verbs followed by the preposition **con** and the infinitive

- The following verbs are the most common ones that can be followed by **con** and the infinitive:

**amenazar con hacer algo**

to threaten to do something

**soñar con hacer algo**

to dream about doing something

**Amenazó con denunciarlos.**

He threatened to report them.

**Sueño con vivir en España.**

I dream about living in Spain.

### 7 Verbs followed by the preposition **en** and the infinitive

- The verb **quedar** is the most common one that can be followed by **en** and the infinitive:

**quedar en hacer algo**

to agree to do something

**Habíamos quedado en**

We had agreed to meet at eight.

**encontramos a las ocho.**

#### Key points

- ✓ Infinitives are found after prepositions, set phrases and in instructions to the general public.
- ✓ They can also function as the subject or object of a verb, when the infinitive corresponds to the *-ing* form in English.
- ✓ Many Spanish verbs can be followed by another verb in the infinitive.
- ✓ The two verbs may be linked by nothing at all, or by **a**, **de** or another preposition.
- ✓ The construction in Spanish does not always match the English. It's best to learn these constructions when you learn a new verb.



## Prepositions after verbs

- ▶ In English, there are some phrases which are made up of verbs and prepositions, for example, *to accuse somebody of something*, *to look forward to something* and *to rely on something*.
- ▶ In Spanish there are also lots of set phrases made up of verbs and prepositions. Often the prepositions in Spanish are not the same as they are in English, so you will need to learn them. Listed below are phrases using verbs and some common Spanish prepositions.

⇒ For more information on verbs used with a preposition and the infinitive, see page 147.

### 1 Verbs followed by **a**

- ▶ **a** is often the equivalent of the English word *to* when it is used with an indirect object after verbs like **enviar** (meaning *to send*), **dar** (meaning *to give*) and **decir** (meaning *to say*).

<b>dar algo a alguien</b>	to give something to someone
<b>decir algo a alguien</b>	to say something to someone
<b>enviar algo a alguien</b>	to send something to someone
<b>escribir algo a alguien</b>	to write something to someone
<b>mostrar algo a alguien</b>	to show something to someone

⇒ For more information on *Indirect objects*, see page 49.

### Tip

There is an important difference between Spanish and English with this type of verb. In English, you can say either *to give something to someone* or *to give someone something*.

You can **NEVER** miss out **a** in Spanish in the way that you can sometimes miss out *to* in English.

- ▶ Here are some verbs taking **a** in Spanish that have a different construction in English.

<b>asistir a algo</b>	to attend something, to be at something
<b>dirigirse a (un lugar)</b>	to head for (a place)
<b>dirigirse a alguien</b>	to address somebody
<b>jugar a algo</b>	to play something ( <i>sports/games</i> )
<b>llegar a (un lugar)</b>	to arrive at (a place)

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

<b>oler a algo</b>	to smell of something
<b>parecerse a alguien/algo</b>	to look like somebody/something
<b>subir(se) a un autobús/un coche</b>	to get on a bus/into a car
<b>subir(se) a un árbol</b>	to climb a tree
<b>tener miedo a alguien</b>	to be afraid of somebody
<b>Este perfume huele a jazmín.</b>	This perfume smells of jasmine.
<b>¡De prisa, sube al coche!</b>	Get into the car, quick!
<b>Nunca tuvieron miedo a su padre.</b>	They were never afraid of their father.

⇒ For verbs such as **gustar**, **encantar** and **faltar**, see *Verbal idioms* on page 154.

### 2 Verbs followed by **de**

- ▶ Here are some verbs taking **de** in Spanish that have a different construction in English:

<b>acordarse de algo/alguien</b>	to remember something/somebody
<b>alegrarse de algo</b>	to be glad about something
<b>bajarse de un autobús/un coche</b>	to get off a bus/out of a car
<b>darse cuenta de algo</b>	to realize something
<b>depender de algo/alguien</b>	to depend on something/somebody
<b>despedirse de alguien</b>	to say goodbye to somebody
<b>preocuparse de algo/alguien</b>	to worry about something/somebody
<b>quejarse de algo</b>	to complain about something
<b>reírse de algo/alguien</b>	to laugh at something/somebody
<b>salir de (un cuarto/un edificio)</b>	to leave (a room/a building)
<b>tener ganas de algo</b>	to want something
<b>tener miedo de algo</b>	to be afraid of something
<b>trabajar de (camarero/secretario)</b>	to work as (a waiter/secretary)
<b>tratarse de algo/alguien</b>	to be a question of something/to be about somebody

<b>Nos acordamos muy bien de aquellas vacaciones.</b>	We remember that holiday very well.
<b>Se bajó del coche.</b>	He got out of the car.
<b>No depende de mí.</b>	It doesn't depend on me.
<b>Se preocupa mucho de su apariencia.</b>	He worries a lot about his appearance.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.



**3 Verbs followed by con**

- Here are some verbs taking **con** in Spanish that have a different construction in English:

<b>comparar algo/a alguien con algo/alguien</b>	to compare something/somebody with something/somebody
<b>contar con alguien/algo</b>	to rely on somebody/something
<b>encontrarse con alguien</b>	to meet somebody ( <i>by chance</i> )
<b>enfadarse con alguien</b>	to get annoyed with somebody
<b>estar de acuerdo con alguien/algo</b>	to agree with somebody/something
<b>hablar con alguien</b>	to talk to somebody
<b>soñar con alguien/algo</b>	to dream about somebody/something

**Cuento contigo.**

I'm relying on you.

**Me encontré con ella al entrar en el banco.**

I met her as I was going into the bank.

**¿Puedo hablar con usted un momento?**

May I talk to you for a moment?

**4 Verbs followed by en**

- Here are some verbs taking **en** in Spanish that have a different construction in English:

<b>entrar en (un edificio/un cuarto)</b>	to enter, go into (a building/a room)
<b>pensar en algo/alguien</b>	to think about something/somebody
<b>trabajar en (una oficina/una fábrica)</b>	to work in (an office/a factory)
<b>No quiero pensar en eso.</b>	I don't want to think about that.

**5 Verbs followed by por**

- Here are some verbs taking **por** in Spanish that have a different construction in English:

<b>interesarse por algo/alguien</b>	to ask about something/somebody
<b>preguntar por alguien</b>	to ask for/about somebody
<b>preocuparse por algo/alguien</b>	to worry about something/somebody

**Me interesaba mucho por la arqueología.**

I was very interested in archaeology.

**Se preocupa mucho por su apariencia.**

He worries a lot about his appearance.

**6 Verbs taking a direct object in Spanish but not in English**

- In English there are a few verbs that are followed by *at*, *for* or *to* which, in Spanish, are not followed by any preposition other than the personal **a**.

⇒ For more information on **Personal a**, see page 182.

<b>mirar algo/a alguien</b>	to look at something/somebody
<b>escuchar algo/a alguien</b>	to listen to something/somebody
<b>buscar algo/a alguien</b>	to look for something/somebody
<b>pedir algo</b>	to ask for something
<b>esperar algo/a alguien</b>	to wait for something/somebody
<b>pagar algo</b>	to pay for something
<b>Mira esta foto.</b>	Look at this photo.
<b>Me gusta escuchar música.</b>	I like listening to music.
<b>Estoy buscando las gafas.</b>	I'm looking for my glasses.
<b>Pidió una taza de té.</b>	He asked for a cup of tea.
<b>Estamos esperando el tren.</b>	We're waiting for the train.
<b>Ya he pagado el billete.</b>	I've already paid for my ticket.
<b>Estoy buscando a mi hermano.</b>	I'm looking for my brother.

**Key points**

- ✓ The prepositions used with Spanish verbs are often very different from those used in English, so make sure you learn common expressions involving prepositions in Spanish.
- ✓ The most common prepositions used with verbs in Spanish are **a**, **de**, **con**, **en** and **por**.
- ✓ Some Spanish verbs are not followed by a preposition, but are used with a preposition in English.



## Verbal Idioms

1 Present tense of **gustar**

- You will probably already have come across the phrase **me gusta...** meaning *I like...*. Actually, **gustar** means literally *to please*, and if you remember this, you will be able to use **gustar** much more easily.

**Me gusta el chocolate.** I like chocolate. (*literally: chocolate pleases me*)

**Me gustan los animales.** I like animals. (*literally: animals please me*)

**Nos gusta el español.** We like Spanish. (*literally: Spanish pleases us*)

**Nos gustan los españoles.** We like Spanish people. (*literally: Spanish people please us*)

- Even though **chocolate**, **animales**, and so on, come after **gustar**, they are the **subject** of the verb (the person or thing performing the action) and therefore the endings of **gustar** change to agree with them.
- When the thing that you like is **singular**, you use **gusta** (*third person singular*), and when the thing that you like is **plural**, you use **gustan** (*third person plural*).

**Le gusta Francia.** He/She likes France. (*literally: France pleases him/her*)

**Le gustan los caramelos.** He/She likes sweets. (*literally: Sweets please him/her*)

- ⓘ Note that **me**, **te**, **le**, **nos**, **os** and **les**, which are used with **gustar**, are indirect object pronouns.

➡ For more information on **Indirect object pronouns**, see page 49.

2 Other tenses of **gustar**

- You can use **gustar** in other tenses in Spanish.

**Les gustó la fiesta.** They liked the party.

**Les gustaron los fuegos artificiales.** They liked the fireworks.

**Te va a gustar la película.** You'll like the film.

**Te van a gustar las fotos.** You'll like the photos.

**Les ha gustado mucho el museo.** They liked the museum a lot

**Les han gustado mucho los cuadros.** They liked the paintings a lot.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- You can also use **más** with **gustar** to say what you prefer.

**A mí me gusta más el rojo.** I prefer the red one. (*literally: the red one pleases me more*)

**A mí me gustan más los rojos.** I prefer the red ones. (*literally: the red ones please me more*)

3 Other verbs like **gustar**

- There are several other verbs which behave in the same way as **gustar**:

• **encantar**

**Me encanta el flamenco.** I love flamenco.

**Me encantan los animales.** I love animals.

• **faltar**

**Le faltaba un botón.** He had a button missing.

**Le faltaban tres dientes.** He had three teeth missing.

• **quedar**

**No les queda nada.** They have nothing left.

**Sólo nos quedan dos kilómetros.** We've only got two kilometres left.

• **doler**

**Le dolía la cabeza.** His head hurt.

**Le dolían las muelas.** His teeth hurt.

• **interesar**

**Te interesará el libro.** The book will interest you.

**Te interesarán sus noticias.** His news will interest you.

• **importar**

**No me importa la lluvia.** The rain doesn't matter to me. or I don't mind the rain.

**Me importan mucho mis estudios.** My studies matter to me a lot.

• **hacer falta**

**Nos hace falta un ordenador.** We need a computer.

**Nos hacen falta libros.** We need books.

**Grammar Extra!**

All the examples given above are in the third persons singular and plural as these are by far the most common. However, it is also possible to use these verbs in other forms.

**Creo que le gustas.** I think he likes you. (*literally: I think you please him*)



#### 4 Verbal idioms used with another verb

- In English you can say *I like playing football, we love swimming* and so on, and in Spanish you can also use another verb with most of the verbs like **gustar**. However, the verb form you use for the second verb in Spanish is the **infinitive**.

**Le gusta jugar al fútbol.**

**No me gusta bailar.**

**Nos encanta estudiar.**

**No me importa tener que esperar.**

He/She likes playing football.

I don't like dancing.

We love studying.

I don't mind having to wait.

- ⇒ For more information on the **Infinitive**, see page 144.

#### Key points

- ✓ There are a number of common verbs in Spanish which are used in the opposite way to English, for example, **gustar**, **encantar**, **hacer falta**, and so on. With all these verbs, the object of the English verb is the subject of the Spanish verb.
- ✓ The endings of these verbs change according to whether the thing liked or needed and so on is singular or plural.
- ✓ All these verbs can be followed by another verb in the infinitive.

## NEGATIVES

### What is a negative?

A **negative** question or statement is one which contains a word such as *not*, *never* or *nothing* and is used to say that something is not happening, is not true or is absent.

#### 1 no

- In English, we often make sentences negative by adding *don't*, *doesn't* or *didn't* before the verb. In Spanish you simply add **no** (meaning *not*) before the main verb.

#### Positive

**Trabaja.**

He works.

#### Negative

→ **No trabaja.**

He doesn't work.

**Comen.**

They eat.

→ **No comen.**

They don't eat.

**Salió.**

She went out.

→ **No salió.**

She didn't go out.

**Lo he visto.**

I've seen it.

→ **No lo he visto.**

I haven't seen it.

**Sabe nadar.**

He can swim.

→ **No sabe nadar.**

He can't swim.

### Típ

**NEVER** translate *don't*, *doesn't*, *didn't* using **hacer**.

- Where there is a subject (the person doing the action) in the sentence, put **no** between the subject and the verb.

**Juan no vive aquí.**

Juan doesn't live here.

**Mi hermana no lee mucho.**

My sister doesn't read much.

**Mis padres no han llamado.**

My parents haven't called.

**Él no lo comprenderá.**

He won't understand.

- ❓ Note that the Spanish word **no** also means *no* in answer to a question.

- Where the subject is only shown by the verb ending, **no** goes before the verb.

**No tenemos tiempo.**

We haven't got time.

**Todavía no ha llegado.**

He hasn't arrived yet.

**No hemos comido.**

We haven't eaten.

**No llevará mucho tiempo.**

It won't take long.

- If there are any object pronouns (for example, **me**, **te**, **lo**, **los**, **le** and so on) before the verb, **no** goes **BEFORE** them.

**No lo he visto.**

I didn't see it.

**No me gusta el fútbol.**

I don't like football.



- In phrases consisting only of *not* and another word, such as *not now* or *not me*, the Spanish **no** usually goes **AFTER** the other word.

<b>Ahora no.</b>	Not now.
<b>Yo no.</b>	Not me.
<b>Todavía no.</b>	Not yet.

- Some phrases have a special construction in Spanish.

<b>Espero que sí.</b>	I hope so.	→	<b>Espero que no.</b>	I hope not.
<b>Creo que sí.</b>	I think so.	→	<b>Creo que no.</b>	I don't think so.

## 2 Other negative words

- In Spanish, you can form negatives using pairs and groups of words, as you can in English.

- **no ... nunca** never or not ... ever  
**No la veo nunca.** I never see her or I don't ever see her.
- **no ... jamás** never or not ... ever  
**No la veo jamás.** I never see her or I don't ever see her.
- **no ... nada** nothing or not ... anything  
**No ha dicho nada.** He has said nothing or He hasn't said anything.
- **no ... nadie** nobody or not ... anybody  
**No hablaron con nadie.** They spoke to nobody or They didn't speak to anybody.
- **no ... tampoco** not ... either  
**Yo no la vi. – Yo tampoco.** I didn't see her. – Neither did I. or I didn't either. or Nor did I.  
**A él no le gusta el café y a mí tampoco.** He doesn't like coffee and neither do I.
- **no ... ni ... ni** neither ... nor  
**No vinieron ni Carlos ni Ana.** Neither Carlos nor Ana came.
- **no ... más** no longer or not ... any more  
**No te veré más.** I won't see you any more.
- **no ... ningún/ninguna** + *noun* no or not ... any  
**No tiene ningún interés en ir.** She has no interest in going.

- Most of these negative words can also be used without **no** provided they come before any verb.

<b>Nunca</b> or <b>Jamás</b> la veo.	I never see her.
<b>Nadie</b> vino.	No one came.
<b>Ni Pedro ni Pablo</b> fuman.	Neither Pedro nor Pablo smokes.
<b>¿Quién te ha dicho eso? – Nadie.</b>	Who told you that? - No one.
<b>¿Qué has hecho? – Nada.</b>	What have you done? – Nothing.

- Sometimes negative expressions combine with each other.

<b>Nunca hacen nada.</b>	They never do anything.
<b>Nunca viene nadie.</b>	No one ever comes.
<b>No lo haré nunca más.</b>	I'll never do it again.
<b>No veo nunca a nadie.</b>	I never see anyone.

## 3 Word order with negatives

- In English you can put words like *never* and *ever* between *have/has/had* and the past participle, for example, *We have never been to Argentina*. You should **NEVER** separate **he, has, ha, había** and so on from the past participle of the verb in Spanish.

<b>Nunca hemos estado en Argentina.</b>	We have never been to Argentina.
<b>Nunca había visto nada así.</b>	I had never seen anything like this.
<b>Ninguno de nosotros había esquiado nunca.</b>	None of us had ever skied.

- ⇒ For more information on **Past participles**, see page 115.

### Key points

- ✓ The Spanish word **no** is equivalent to both *no* and *not* in English.
- ✓ You can make sentences negative by putting **no** before the verb (and before any object pronouns that are in front of the verb).
- ✓ Other negative words also exist, such as **nunca, nadie** and **nada**. Use them in combination with **no**, with the verb sandwiched in between. Most of them also work on their own provided they go **before** any verb.
- ✓ Never insert negative words, or anything else, between **he, has, ha, había** and so on and the past participle.



QUESTIONS

What is a question?

A **question** is a sentence which is used to ask someone about something and which often has the verb in front of the subject. Questions often include a question word such as *why, where, who, which* or *how*.

Asking questions in Spanish

There are three main ways of asking questions in Spanish:

- by making your voice go up at the end of the sentence
- by changing normal word order
- by using a question word

Tip

Don't forget the opening question mark in Spanish. It goes at the beginning of the question or of the question part of the sentence.

- ¿No quieres tomar algo? Wouldn't you like something to eat or drink?
- Eres inglés, ¿verdad? You're English, aren't you?

1 Asking a question by making your voice go up

► If you are expecting the answer *yes* or *no*, there is a very simple way of asking a question. You keep the word order exactly as it would be in a normal sentence but you turn it into a question by making your voice go up at the end.

- ¿Hablas español? Do you speak Spanish?
- ¿Es profesor? Is he a teacher?
- ¿Hay leche? Is there any milk?
- ¿Te gusta la música? Do you like music?

► When the subject (the person or thing doing the action) of the verb is a noun, pronoun or name it can be given before the verb, just as in an ordinary sentence. But you turn the statement into a question by making your voice go up at the end.

- ¿Tu hermana ha comprado pan? Did your sister buy any bread?
- ¿Tú lo has hecho? Did you do it?
- ¿Tu padre te ha visto? Did your father see you?
- ¿El diccionario está aquí? Is the dictionary here?

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

2 Asking a question by changing word order

► When the subject of the verb is specified, another even more common way of asking questions is to change the word order so that the verb comes **BEFORE** the subject instead of after it.

- ¿Lo has hecho tú? Did you do it?
- ¿Te ha visto tu padre? Did your father see you?
- ¿Está el diccionario aquí? Is the dictionary here?

ⓘ Note that the position of object pronouns is not affected.

➔ For more information on **Word order with object pronouns**, see pages 47, 50 and 52.

Grammar Extra!

If the verb has an object, such as *any bread* in *Did your sister buy any bread?*, the subject comes **AFTER** the object, provided the object is short.

- ¿Ha comprado pan tu hermana? Did your sister buy any bread?
- ¿Vio la película tu novio? Did your boyfriend see the film?

If the object is made up of several words, the subject goes **BEFORE** it.

- Se han comprado tus padres aquella casa de que me hablaste? Have your parents bought that house you told me about?

When there is an adverbial phrase (*to the party, in Barcelona*) after the verb, the subject can go **BEFORE OR AFTER** the adverbial phrase.

- ¿Viene a la fiesta Andrés? or Is Andrés coming to the party?
- ¿Viene Andrés a la fiesta?

3 Asking a question by using a question word

► Question words are words like *when, what, who, which, where* and *how* that are used to ask for information. In Spanish, **ALL** question words have an accent on them.

- ¿adónde? where ... to?
- ¿cómo? how?
- ¿cuál/cuáles? which
- ¿cuándo? when?
- ¿cuánto/cuánta? how much?
- ¿cuántos/cuántas? how many?
- ¿dónde? where?
- ¿para qué? what for?
- ¿por qué? why?
- ¿qué? what?, which?
- ¿quién? who?



**Típ**

Be careful not to mix up **por qué** (meaning *why*) with **porque** (meaning *because*).

**¿Cuándo se fue?**

When did he go?

**¿Qué te pasa?**

What's the matter?

**¿Qué chaqueta te vas a poner?**

Which jacket are you going to wear?

**¿Cuál de los dos quieres?**

Which do you want?

**¿Cuánto azúcar quieres?**

How much sugar do you want?

**¿Cuánto tiempo llevas esperando?**

How long have you been waiting?

⇒ For more information on question words, see **Interrogative adjectives** on page 32 and **Interrogative pronouns** on page 65.

► When the question starts with a question word that isn't the subject of the verb, the noun or pronoun (if given) that is the subject of the verb goes **AFTER** it.

**¿De qué color es la moqueta?**

What colour's the carpet?

**¿A qué hora comienza el concierto?**

What time does the concert start?

**¿Dónde están tus pantalones?**

Where are your trousers?

**¿Adónde iba tu padre?**

Where was your father going?

**¿Cómo están tus padres?**

How are your parents?

**¿Cuándo volverán ustedes?**

When will you come back?

**4 Which question word to use?**

► **qué** or **cuál** or **cuáles** can be used to mean *which*:

- always use **qué** before a noun

**¿Qué chaqueta te vas a poner?** Which jacket are you going to wear?

- otherwise use **cuál** (*singular*) or **cuáles** (*plural*)

**¿Cuál quieres?**

Which (one) do you want?

**¿Cuáles quieres?**

Which (ones) do you want?

► **quién** or **quiénes** can be used to mean *who*:

- use **quién** when asking about one person

**¿Quién ganó?**

Who won?

- use **quiénes** when asking about more than one person

**¿Quiénes estaban?**

Who was there?

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

❗ Note that you need to put the personal **a** before **quién** and **quiénes** when it acts as an object.

**¿A quién viste?**

Who did you see?

⇒ For more information on **Personal a**, see page 182.

► **de quién** or **de quiénes** can be used to mean *whose*:

- use **de quién** when there is likely to be one owner

**¿De quién es este abrigo?**

Whose coat is this?

- use **de quiénes** when there is likely to be more than one owner

**¿De quiénes son estos abrigos?**

Whose coats are these?

❗ Note that the structure in Spanish is the equivalent of *Whose is this coat?/Whose are these coats?* Don't try putting **¿de quién?** or **¿de quiénes?** immediately before a noun.

► **qué**, **cómo**, **cuál** and **cuáles** can all be used to mean *what* although **qué** is the most common translation:

- use **cómo** not **qué** when asking someone to repeat something that you didn't hear properly

**¿Cómo (has dicho)?**

What (did you say)?

- use **¿cuál es ... ?** and **¿cuáles son ... ?** to mean *what is ... ?* and *what/are ... ?* when you aren't asking for a definition

**¿Cuál es la capital de Francia?**

What's the capital of France?

**¿Cuál es su número de teléfono?**

What's his telephone number?

- use **¿qué es ... ?** and **¿qué son ... ?** to mean *what is ... ?* and *what are ... ?* when you are asking for a definition

**¿Qué son los genes?**

What are genes?

- always use **qué** to mean *what* before another noun

**¿Qué hora es?**

What time is it?

**¿Qué asignaturas estudias?**

What subjects are you studying?

**Típ**

You can finish an English question (or sentence) with a preposition such as *about*, for example, *Who did you write to?; What are you talking about?* You can **NEVER** end a Spanish question or sentence with a preposition.

**¿Con quién hablaste?**

Who did you speak to?



## Grammar Extra!

All the questions we have looked at so far have been straight questions, otherwise known as **direct questions**. However, sometimes instead of asking directly, for example, *Where is it?* or *Why did you do it?*, we ask the question in a more roundabout way, for example, *Can you tell me where it is?* or *Please tell me why you did it*. These are called **indirect questions**.

In indirect questions in English we say *where it is* instead of *where is it* and *why you did it* instead of *why did you do it*, but in Spanish you still put the subject **AFTER** the verb.

**¿Sabes adónde iba tu padre?** Do you know where your father was going?

**¿Puedes decirme para qué sirven los diccionarios?** Can you tell me what dictionaries are for?

The subject also goes **AFTER** the verb in Spanish when you report a question in indirect speech.

**Quería saber adónde iba mi padre.** He wanted to know where my father was going.

**?** Note that you still put accents on question words in Spanish even when they are in indirect and reported questions or when they come after expressions of uncertainty:

**No sé qué hacer.** I don't know what to do.

**No sabemos por qué se fue.** We don't know why he left.

## 5 Negative questions

► When you want to make a negative question, put **no** before the verb in the same way that you do in statements (non-questions).

**¿No vienes?** Aren't you coming?

**¿No lo has visto?** Didn't you see it?

► You can also use **o no** at the end of a question in the same way that we can ask *or not* in English.

**¿Vienes o no?** Are you coming **or not?**

**¿Lo quieres o no?** Do you want it **or not?**

## 6 Short questions

► In English we sometimes check whether our facts and beliefs are correct by putting *isn't it?*, *don't they?*, *are they?* and so on at the end of a comment. In Spanish, you can add **¿verdad?** in the same way.

**Hace calor, ¿verdad?** It's hot, **isn't it?**

**Te gusta, ¿verdad?** You like it, **don't you?**

**No te olvidarás, ¿verdad?** You won't forget, **will you?**

**No vino, ¿verdad?** He didn't come, **did he?**

► You can also use **¿no?**, especially after positive comments.

**Hace calor, ¿no?** It's hot, **isn't it?**

**Te gusta, ¿no?** You like it, **don't you?**

## 7 Answering questions

► To answer a question which requires a *yes* or *no* answer, just use **sí** or **no**.

**¿Te gusta? – Sí/No.** Do you like it? – Yes, I do/No, I don't.

**¿Está aquí? – Sí/No.** Is he here? – Yes he is/No, he isn't.

**¿Tienes prisa? – Sí/No.** Are you in a hurry? – Yes, I am/No, I'm not.

**No lo has hecho, ¿verdad? – Sí/No.** You haven't done it, have you? – Yes, I have/No, I haven't.

► You can also often answer **sí** or **no** followed by the verb in question. In negative answers this may mean that you say **no** twice.

**Quieres acompañarme? – Sí, quiero.** Would you like to come with me? – Yes, I would.

**¿Vas a ir a la fiesta? – No, no voy.** Are you going to the party? – No, I'm not.

## Key points

- ✓ You ask a question in Spanish by making your voice go up at the end of the sentence, by changing normal word order, and by using question words.
- ✓ Question words always have an accent on them.
- ✓ To make a negative question, add **no** before the verb.
- ✓ You can add **¿verdad?** to check whether your facts or beliefs are correct.



## ADVERBS

## What is an adverb?

An **adverb** is a word usually used with verbs, adjectives or other adverbs that gives more information about when, how, where, or in what circumstances something happens, or to what degree something is true, for example, *quickly, happily, now, extremely, very.*

## How adverbs are used

- ▶ In general, adverbs are used together with verbs, adjectives and other adverbs, for example, *act quickly; smile cheerfully; rather ill; a lot happier; really slowly; very well.*
- ▶ Adverbs can also relate to the whole sentence. In this case they often tell you what the speaker is thinking or feeling.  
Fortunately, Jan had already left.

## How adverbs are formed

## 1 The basic rules

- ▶ In English, adverbs that tell you how something happened are often formed by adding *-ly* to an adjective, for example, *sweet* → *sweetly*. In Spanish, you form this kind of adverb by adding **-mente** to the feminine singular form of the adjective.

Masculine adjective	Feminine adjective	Adverb	Meaning
<b>lento</b>	<b>lenta</b>	<b>lentamente</b>	slowly
<b>normal</b>	<b>normal</b>	<b>normalmente</b>	normally

**Habla muy lentamente.** He speaks very slowly.  
**¡Hazlo inmediatamente!** Do it immediately!  
**Normalmente llego a las nueve.** I normally arrive at nine o'clock.

- 7 Note that adverbs **NEVER** change their endings in Spanish to agree with anything.

## Típ

You don't have to worry about adding or removing accents on the adjective when you add **-mente**; they stay as they are.

**fácil** easy → **fácilmente** easily

## Grammar Extra!

When there are two or more adverbs joined by a conjunction such as **y** (meaning *and*) or **pero** (meaning *but*), leave out the **-mente** ending on all but the last adverb.

**Lo hicieron lenta pero eficazmente.** They did it slowly but efficiently.

Use the form **recién** rather than **recientemente** (meaning *recently*) before a past participle (the form of the verb ending in **-ado** and **-ido** in regular verbs).

**El comedor está recién pintado.** The dining room has just been painted.

⇒ For more information on Past participles, see page 115.

In Spanish, adverbs ending in **-mente** are not as common as adverbs ending in *-ly* in English. For this reason, you will come across other ways of expressing an adverb in Spanish, for example, **con** used with a noun or **de manera** used with an adjective.

**Conduce con cuidado.** Drive carefully.  
**Todos estos cambios ocurren de manera natural.** All these changes happen naturally.

## 2 Irregular adverbs

- ▶ The adverb that comes from **bueno** (meaning *good*) is **bien** (meaning *well*). The adverb that comes from **malo** (meaning *bad*) is **mal** (meaning *badly*).

**Habla bien el español.** He speaks Spanish well.  
**Está muy mal escrito.** It's very badly written.

- ▶ Additionally, there are some other adverbs in Spanish which are exactly the same as the related masculine singular adjective:

- **alto** (adjective: *high, loud*; adverb: *high, loudly*)  
**El avión volaba alto sobre las montañas.** The plane flew high over the mountains.  
**Pepe habla muy alto.** Pepe talks very loudly.
- **bajo** (adjective: *low, quiet*; adverb: *low, quietly*)  
**El avión volaba muy bajo.** The plane was flying very low.  
**¡Habla bajo!** Speak quietly.
- **barato** (adjective: *cheap*; adverb: *cheaply*)  
**Aquí se come muy barato.** You can eat really cheaply here.
- **claro** (adjective: *clear*; adverb: *clearly*)  
**Lo oí muy claro.** I heard it very clearly.
- **derecho** (adjective: *right, straight*; adverb: *straight*)  
**Vino derecho hacia mí.** He came straight towards me.



- **fuerte** (adjective: *loud, hard*; adverb: *loudly, hard*)  
**Habla muy fuerte.** He talks very loudly.  
**No lo golpees tan fuerte.** Don't hit it so hard.

- **rápido** (adjective: *fast, quick*; adverb: *fast, quickly*)  
**Conduces demasiado rápido.** You drive too fast.  
**Lo hice tan rápido como pude.** I did it as quickly as I could.

**[i]** Note that, when used as adverbs, these words do **NOT** agree with anything.

⇒ For more information on words which can be both adjectives and adverbs, see page 175.

### Grammar Extra!

Sometimes an **adjective** is used in Spanish where in English we would use an **adverb**.

- Esperaban impacientes.** They were waiting impatiently.
- Vivieron muy felices.** They lived very happily.

**[i]** Note that these Spanish **adjectives** describe the person or thing being talked about and therefore **MUST** agree with them.

Often you could equally well use an adverb or an adverbial expression in Spanish.

- Esperaban impacientemente** or **con paciencia.** They were waiting impatiently.

### Key points

- ✓ To form adverbs that tell you how something happens, you can usually add **-mente** to the feminine singular adjective in Spanish.
- ✓ Adverbs don't agree with anything.
- ✓ Some Spanish adverbs are irregular, as in English.
- ✓ Some Spanish adverbs are identical in form to their corresponding adjectives; when used as adverbs, they never agree with anything.

## Comparatives and superlatives of adverbs

### 1 Comparative adverbs

#### What is a comparative adverb?

A **comparative adverb** is one which, in English, has **-er** on the end of it or **more** or **less** in front of it, for example, *earlier, later, more/less often*.

► Adverbs can be used to make comparisons in Spanish, just as they can in English. The comparative of adverbs (*more often, more efficiently, faster*) is formed using the same phrases as for adjectives:

- **más ... (que)** more ... (than)  
**más rápido (que)** faster (than), more quickly (than)  
**Corre más rápido que tú.** He runs faster than you do.
- **menos ... (que)** less ... (than)  
**menos rápido (que)** less fast (than), less quickly (than)  
**Conduce menos rápido tú.** He drives less fast than you do.

### 2 Superlative adverbs

#### What is a superlative adverb?

A **superlative adverb** is one which, in English, has **-est** on the end of it or **most** or **least** in front of it, for example, *soonest, most/least often*.

► The superlative of adverbs (*the most often, the most efficiently, the fastest*) is formed in the same way in Spanish as the comparative, using **más** and **menos**. In this case they mean *the most* and *the least*.

- María es la que corre más rápido.** Maria is the one who runs (the) fastest.
- la chica que sabe más** the girl who knows (the) most
- la chica que sabe menos** the girl who knows (the) least
- El que llegó menos tarde fue Miguel.** Miguel was the one who arrived least late.

**[i]** Note that even though comparative and superlative adverbs are usually identical in Spanish, you can tell which one is meant by the rest of the sentence.

### 3 Irregular comparative and superlative adverbs

► Some common Spanish adverbs have irregular comparative and superlatives.



Adverb	Meaning	Comparative	Meaning	Superlative	Meaning
<b>bien</b>	well	<b>mejor</b>	better	<b>mejor</b>	(the) best
<b>mal</b>	badly	<b>peor</b>	worse	<b>peor</b>	(the) worst
<b>mucho</b>	a lot	<b>más</b>	more	<b>más</b>	(the) most
<b>poco</b>	little	<b>menos</b>	less	<b>menos</b>	(the) least

**La conozco mejor que tú.**

**¿Quién lo hace mejor?**

**Ahora salgo más/menos.**

I know her better than you do.

Who does it (the) best?

I go out more/less these days.

### Típ

When saying *more than*, *less than* or *fewer than* followed by a number, use **más** and **menos de** rather than **más** and **menos que**.

**más/menos de veinte cajas** more/fewer than twenty boxes

- ❗ Note that in phrases like *it's the least one can expect* or *it's the least I can do*, where the adverb is qualified by further information, in Spanish you have to put **lo** before the adverb.

**Es lo menos que se puede esperar.**

It's the least one can expect.

### 4 Other ways of making comparisons

- There are other ways of making comparisons in Spanish:

- **tanto como** as much as

**No lee tanto como tú.**

He doesn't read as much as you.

- **tan ... como** as ... as

**Vine tan pronto como pude.**

I came as fast as I could.

#### Key points

- ✓ **más** + adverb (+ **que**) = *more* + adverb + (*than*)
- ✓ **menos** + adverb (+ **que**) = *less* + adverb + (*than*)
- ✓ **más** + adverb = (*the*) *most* + adverb
- ✓ **menos** + adverb = (*the*) *least* + adverb
- ✓ There are a few irregular comparative and superlative adverbs.
- ✓ There are other ways of making comparisons in Spanish: **tanto como**, **tan ... como**.

## Common adverbs

### 1 One-word adverbs not ending in -mente

- There are some common adverbs that do not end in **-mente**, most of which give more information about when or where something happens or to what degree something is true.

- **ahí** there

**¡Ahí están!**

There they are!

- **ahora** now

**¿Dónde vamos ahora?**

Where are we going now?

- **allá** there

**allá arriba**

up there

- **allí** there

**Allí está.**

There it is.

- **anoche** last night

**Anoche llovió.**

It rained last night.

- **anteanoche** the night before last

**Anteanoche nevó.**

It snowed the night before last.

- **anteayer** the day before yesterday

**Anteayer hubo tormenta.**

There was a storm the day before yesterday.

- **antes** before

**Esta película ya la he visto antes.**

I've seen this film before.

- **apenas** hardly

**Apenas podía levantarse.**

He could hardly stand up.

- **aquí** here

**Aquí está el informe.**

Here's the report.

- **arriba** above, upstairs

**Visto desde arriba parece más pequeño.**

Seen from above it looks smaller.

**Arriba están los dormitorios.**

The bedrooms are upstairs.



- **atrás** behind  
**Yo me quedé atrás.** I stayed behind.
  - **aun** even  
**Aun sentado me duele la pierna.** Even when I'm sitting down, my leg hurts.
  - **aún** still, yet  
**¿Aún te duele?** Does it still hurt?
- Típ**

The following mnemonic (memory jogger) should help you remember when to use **aun** and when to use **aún**:  
**Even aun** doesn't have an accent.  
**aún still** has an accent.  
**aún** hasn't lost its accent yet.
- **ayer** yesterday  
**Ayer me compré un bolso.** I bought a handbag yesterday.
  - **casi** almost  
**Son casi las cinco.** It's almost five o'clock.
  - **cerca** near  
**El colegio está muy cerca.** The school is very near.
  - **claro** clearly  
**Lo oí muy claro.** I heard it very clearly.
  - **debajo** underneath  
**Miré debajo.** I looked underneath.
  - **dentro** inside  
**¿Qué hay dentro?** What's inside?
  - **despacio** slowly  
**Conduce despacio.** Drive slowly.
  - **después** afterwards  
**Después estábamos muy cansados.** We were very tired afterwards.
  - **detrás** behind  
**Vienen detrás.** They're coming along behind.

- **enfrente** opposite  
**la casa de enfrente** the house opposite
- **enseguida** straightaway  
**La ambulancia llegó enseguida.** The ambulance arrived straightaway.
- **entonces** then  
**¿Qué hiciste entonces?** What did you do then?
- **hasta** even  
**Estudia hasta cuando está de vacaciones.** He studies even when he's on holiday.
- **hoy** today  
**Hoy no tenemos clase.** We haven't any lessons today.
- **jamás** never  
**Jamás he visto nada parecido.** I've never seen anything like it.
- **lejos** far  
**¿Está lejos?** Is it far?
- **luego** then, later  
**Luego fuimos al cine.** Then we went to the cinema.
- **muy** very  
**Estoy muy cansada.** I'm very tired.
- **no** no, not  
**No, no me gusta.** No. I don't like it.
- **nunca** never  
**No viene nunca.** He never comes.  
**¿Has estado alguna vez en Argentina? – 'No, nunca.'** 'Have you ever been to Argentina?' – 'No, never.'
- **pronto** soon, early  
**Llegarán pronto.** They'll be here soon.  
**¿Por qué has llegado tan pronto?** Why have you arrived so early?
- **quizás** perhaps  
**Quizás está cansado.** Perhaps he's tired.



7 Note that you use the present subjunctive after **quizás** if referring to the future.

**Quizás venga mañana.** Perhaps he'll come tomorrow.

➔ For more information on the *Subjunctive*, see page 134.

• **sí** yes  
**¿Te apetece un café? – Sí, gracias.** Do you fancy a coffee? – Yes, please.

• **siempre** always  
**Siempre dicen lo mismo.** They always say the same thing.

• **sólo** only  
**Sólo cuesta tres euros.** It only costs three euros.

• **también** also, too  
**A mí también me gusta.** I like it too.

• **tampoco** either, neither  
**Yo tampoco lo compré.** I didn't buy it either.  
**Yo no la vi. – Yo tampoco.** I didn't see her. – Neither did I.

• **tan** as, so  
**Vine tan pronto como pude.** I came as fast as I could.  
**Habla tan deprisa que no la entiendo.** She speaks so fast that I can't understand her.

• **tarde** late  
**Se está haciendo tarde.** It's getting late.

• **temprano** early  
**Tengo que levantarme temprano.** I've got to get up early.

• **todavía** still, yet, even  
**Todavía tengo dos.** I've still got two.  
**Todavía no han llegado.** They haven't arrived yet.  
**mejor todavía** even better

• **ya** already  
**Ya lo he hecho.** I've already done it.

## 2 Words which are used both as adjectives and adverbs

➤ **bastante**, **demasiado**, **tanto**, **mucho** and **poco** can be used both as adjectives and as adverbs. When they are **adjectives**, their endings change in the feminine and plural to agree with what they describe. When they are **adverbs**, the endings don't change.

	Adjective use	Adverb use
<b>bastante</b> enough; quite a lot; quite	<b>Hay bastantes libros.</b> There are enough books.	<b>Ya has comido bastante.</b> You've had enough to eat. <b>Son bastante ricos.</b> They are quite rich.
<b>demasiado</b> too much ( <i>plural</i> : too many); too	<b>demasiada mantequilla</b> too much butter <b>demasiados libros</b> too many books	<b>He comido demasiado.</b> I've eaten too much. <b>Llegamos demasiado tarde.</b> We arrived too late.
<b>tanto</b> as much ( <i>plural</i> : as many); as often	<b>Ahora no bebo tanta leche.</b> I don't drink as much milk these days. <b>Tengo tantas cosas que hacer.</b> I've so many things to do.	<b>Se preocupa tanto que no puede dormir.</b> He worries so much that he can't sleep. <b>Ahora no la veo tanto.</b> I don't see her so often now.
<b>mucho</b> a lot (of), much ( <i>plural</i> : many)	<b>Había mucha gente.</b> There were a lot of people. <b>muchas cosas</b> a lot of things	<b>¿Lees mucho?</b> Do you read a lot? <b>¿Está mucho más lejos?</b> Is it much further?
<b>poco</b> little, not much, ( <i>plural</i> : few, not many); not very	<b>Hay poca leche.</b> There isn't much milk. <b>Tiene pocos amigos.</b> He hasn't got many friends.	<b>Habla muy poco.</b> He speaks very little. <b>Es poco sociable.</b> He's not very sociable.

### Tip

Don't confuse **poco**, which means *little, not much or not very*, with **un poco**, which means *a little or a bit*.

**Come poco.** He eats little.  
**¿Me das un poco?** Can I have a bit?



- **más** and **menos** can also be used both as adjectives and adverbs. However, they **NEVER** change their endings, even when used as adjectives.

	Adjective use	Adverb use
<b>más</b> more	<b>No tengo más dinero.</b> I haven't any more money. <b>más libros</b> more books	<b>Es más inteligente que yo.</b> He's more intelligent than I am. <b>Mi hermano trabaja más ahora.</b> My brother works more now.
<b>menos</b> less; fewer	<b>menos mantequilla</b> less butter <b>Había menos gente que ayer.</b> There were fewer people than yesterday.	<b>Estoy menos sorprendida que tú.</b> I'm less surprised than you are. <b>Trabaja menos que yo.</b> He doesn't work as hard as I do.

### 3 Adverbs made up of more than one word

- Just as in English, some Spanish adverbs are made up of two or more words instead of just one.

<b>a veces</b>	sometimes
<b>a menudo</b>	often
<b>de vez en cuando</b>	from time to time
<b>todo el tiempo</b>	all the time
<b>hoy en día</b>	nowadays
<b>en seguida</b>	immediately

#### Key points

- ✓ There are a number of common adverbs in Spanish which do not end in **-mente**.
- ✓ **bastante**, **demasiado**, **tanto**, **mucho** and **poco** can be used both as adjectives and as adverbs. Their endings change in the feminine and plural when they are adjectives, but when they are adverbs their endings **do not** change.
- ✓ **más** and **menos** can be both adjectives and adverbs – their endings **never** change.
- ✓ A number of Spanish adverbs are made up of more than one word.

## Position of adverbs

### 1 Adverbs with verbs

- In English, adverbs can come in various places in a sentence, at the beginning, in the middle or at the end.
- I'm **never** coming back.  
See you **soon**!  
**Suddenly**, the phone rang.  
I'd **really** like to come.
- In Spanish, the rules for the position of adverbs in a sentence are more fixed. The adverb can either go immediately **AFTER** the verb or **BEFORE** it for emphasis.

<b>No conocemos todavía al nuevo médico.</b>	We still haven't met the new doctor.
<b>Todavía estoy esperando.</b>	I'm still waiting.
<b>Siempre le regalaban flores.</b>	They always gave her flowers.

- When the adverb goes with a verb in the perfect tense or in the pluperfect, you can **NEVER** put the adverb between **haber** and the past participle.

<b>Lo he hecho ya.</b>	I've already done it.
<b>No ha estado nunca en Italia.</b>	She's never been to Italy.

- ⇒ For more information on the **Perfect tense**, see page 115.

### 2 Adverbs with adjectives and adverbs

- The adverb normally goes **BEFORE** any adjective or adverb it is used with.

<b>un sombrero muy bonito</b>	a very nice hat
<b>hablar demasiado alto</b>	to talk too loudly

#### Key points

- ✓ Adverbs follow the verb in most cases.
- ✓ Adverbs can go before verbs for emphasis.
- ✓ You can **never** separate **haber**, **he**, **ha** and so on from the following past participle (the **-ado/-ido** form of regular verbs).
- ✓ Adverbs generally come just before an adjective or another adverb.



## PREPOSITIONS

### What is a preposition?

A **preposition** is a word such as *at, for, with, into* or *from*, which is usually followed by a noun, pronoun or, in English, a word ending in *-ing*. Prepositions show how people and things relate to the rest of the sentence, for example, *She's at home.; a tool for cutting grass; It's from David.*

### Using prepositions

- Prepositions are used in front of nouns and pronouns (such as *people, the man, me, him* and so on), and show the relationship between the noun or pronoun and the rest of the sentence. Although prepositions can be used before verb forms ending in *-ing* in English, in Spanish, they're followed by the **infinitive** – the form of the verb ending in **-ar, -er,** or **-ir**.

**Le enseñé el billete a la revisora.**

I showed my ticket to the ticket inspector.

**Ven con nosotros.**

Come with us.

**Sirve para limpiar zapatos.**

It's for cleaning shoes.

- ⇒ For more information on **Nouns, Pronouns and Infinitives**, see pages 1, 41 and 144.

- Prepositions are also used after certain adjectives and verbs and link them to the rest of the sentence.

**Estoy muy contento con tu trabajo.**

I'm very happy with your work.

**Estamos hartos de repetirlo.**

We're fed up with repeating it.

**¿Te gusta jugar al fútbol?**

Do you like playing football?

- As in English, Spanish prepositions can be made up of several words instead of just one.

**delante de**

in front of

**antes de**

before

- In English we can end a sentence with a preposition such as *for, with* or *into*, even though some people think this is not good grammar. You can **NEVER** end a Spanish sentence with a preposition.

**¿Para qué es?**

What's it for?

**la chica con la que hablaste**

the girl you spoke to

### Típ

The choice of preposition in Spanish is not always what we might expect, coming from English. It is often difficult to give just one English equivalent for a particular Spanish preposition, since prepositions are used so differently in the two languages. This means that you need to learn how they are used and look up set phrases involving prepositions (such as *to be fond of somebody* or *dressed in white*) in a dictionary in order to find an equivalent expression in Spanish.



## a, de, en, para and por

## 1 a

## Típ

When **a** is followed by **el**, the two words merge to become **al**.

- **a** can mean *to* with places and destinations.

**Voy a Madrid.**

I'm going to Madrid.

**Voy al cine.**

I'm going to the cinema.

## Típ

**de** is also used with **a** to mean *from ... to ...*

**de la mañana a la noche**

from morning to night

**de 10 a 12**

from 10 to 12

- **a** can mean *to* with indirect objects.

**Se lo dio a María.**

He gave it to María.

- **a** can mean *to* after **ir** when talking about what someone is *going to* do.

**Voy a verlo mañana.**

I'm going to see him tomorrow.

- **a** can mean *at* with times.

**a las cinco**

at five o'clock

**a las dos y cuarto**

at quarter past two

**a medianoche**

at midnight

- **a** can mean *at* with prices and rates.

**a dos euros el kilo**

(at) two euros a kilo

**a 100 km por hora**

at 100 km per hour

- **a** can mean *at* with ages.

**a los 18 años**

at the age of 18

- **a** can mean *at* with places, but generally only after verbs suggesting movement.

**Te voy a buscar a la estación.**

I'll meet you at the station.

**cuando llegó al aeropuerto**

when he arrived at the airport

## Típ

You can't use **a** to mean *at* when talking about a building, area, or village where someone is. Use **en** instead.

Está **en** casa.

He's at home.

- **a** can mean *onto*.

**Se cayó al suelo.**

He fell onto the floor.

- **a** can mean *into*.

**pegar una foto al álbum**

to stick a photo into the album

- **a** is also used to talk about distance.

**a 8 km de aquí**

(at a distance of) 8 km from here

- **a** is also used after certain adjectives and verbs.

**parecido a esto**

similar to this

- **a** can mean *from* after certain verbs.

**Se lo compré a mi hermano.**

I bought it from my brother.

**Les robaba dinero a sus**

He was stealing money from his classmates.

⇒ For more information on *Prepositions after verbs*, see page 150.

- **a** is used in set phrases.

**a final/finales/fines de mes**

at the end of the month

**a veces**

at times

**a menudo**

often

**a la puerta**

at the door

**a mano**

by hand

**a caballo**

on horseback

**a pie**

on foot

**a tiempo**

on time

**al sol**

in the sun

**a la sombra**

in the shade



## Grammar Extra!

**a** is often used to talk about the manner in which something is done.

<b>a la inglesa</b>	in the English manner
<b>a paso lento</b>	slowly
<b>poco a poco</b>	little by little

The Spanish equivalent of the English construction *on* with a verb ending in *-ing* is **al** followed by the infinitive.

<b>al levantarse</b>	on getting up
<b>al abrir la puerta</b>	on opening the door

2 Personal **a**

► When the direct object of a verb is a specific person or pet animal, **a** is placed immediately before it.

<b>Querían mucho a sus hijos.</b>	They loved their children dearly.
<b>Cuido a mi hermana pequeña.</b>	I look after my little sister.

❗ Note that personal **a** is **NOT** used after the verb **tener**.

<b>Tienen dos hijos.</b>	They have two children.
--------------------------	-------------------------

⇒ For more information on **Direct objects**, see page 46.

3 **de**

## Típ

When **de** is followed by **el**, the two words merge to become **del**.

► **de** can mean *from*.

<b>Soy de Londres.</b>	I'm <u>from</u> London.
<b>un médico de Valencia</b>	a doctor <u>from</u> Valencia

## Típ

**de** is also used with **a** to mean *from ... to ...*

<b>de la mañana a la noche</b>	<u>from</u> morning <u>to</u> night
<b>de 10 a 12</b>	<u>from</u> 10 <u>to</u> 12

► **de** can mean *of*.

**el presidente de Francia**  
**dos litros de leche**

the president of France  
two litres of milk

► **de** shows who or what something belongs to.

**el sombrero de mi padre**

my father's hat  
(literally: the hat of my father)

**la oficina del presidente**

the president's office  
(literally: the office of the president)

► **de** can indicate what something is made of, what it contains or what it is used for.

**un vestido de seda**  
**una caja de cerillas**  
**una taza de té**

a silk dress  
a box of matches  
a cup of tea or  
a teacup

**una silla de cocina**  
**un traje de baño**

a kitchen chair  
a swimming costume

► **de** is used in comparisons when a number is mentioned.

**Había más/menos de 100 personas.**

There were more/fewer than 100 people.

❗ Note that you do **NOT** use **que** with **más** or **menos** when there is a number involved.

► **de** can mean *in* after superlatives (*the most...*, *the biggest*, *the least...*).

**la ciudad más/menos contaminada del mundo**

the most/least polluted city in the world

⇒ For more information on **Superlative adjectives**, see page 26.

► **de** is used after certain adjectives and verbs.

**contento de ver**  
**Es fácil/difícil de entender.**  
**Es capaz de olvidarlo.**

pleased to see  
It's easy/difficult to understand.  
He's quite capable of forgetting it.

⇒ For more information on **Prepositions after verbs**, see page 150.

## Grammar Extra!

**de** is often used in descriptions.

**la mujer del sombrero verde**  
**un chico de ojos azules**

the woman in the green hat  
a boy with blue eyes



4 **en**

- **en** can mean *in* with places.
- |                                |                                |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <b>en el campo</b>             | <b>in</b> the country          |
| <b>en Londres</b>              | <b>in</b> London               |
| <b>en la cama</b>              | <b>in</b> bed                  |
| <b>con un libro en la mano</b> | with a book <b>in</b> his hand |
- **en** can mean *at*.
- |                                |                        |
|--------------------------------|------------------------|
| <b>en casa</b>                 | <b>at</b> home         |
| <b>en el colegio</b>           | <b>at</b> school       |
| <b>en el aeropuerto</b>        | <b>at</b> the airport  |
| <b>en la parada de autobús</b> | <b>at</b> the bus stop |
| <b>en Navidad</b>              | <b>at</b> Christmas    |
- **en** can mean *in* with months, years and seasons and when saying how long something takes or took.
- |                             |                               |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <b>en marzo</b>             | <b>in</b> March               |
| <b>en 2005</b>              | <b>in</b> 2005                |
| <b>Nació en invierno.</b>   | He was born <b>in</b> winter. |
| <b>Lo hice en dos días.</b> | I did it <b>in</b> two days.  |

- ❗ Note the following time phrase which does not use *in* in English.

**en este momento**      **at** this moment

### Típ

There are two ways of talking about a length of time in Spanish which translate the same in English, but have very different meanings.

**Lo haré dentro de una semana** I'll do it **in** a week.

**Lo haré en una semana.** I'll do it **in** a week.

Though both can be translated in the same way, the first sentence means that you'll do it in a week's time; the second means that it will take you a week to do it.

- **en** can mean *in* with languages and in set phrases.

**Está escrito en español.**      It's written **in** Spanish.  
**en voz baja**      **in** a low voice

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- **en** can mean *on*.
- |                                     |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| <b>sentado en una silla</b>         | sitting <b>on</b> a chair                  |
| <b>en la planta baja</b>            | <b>on</b> the ground floor                 |
| <b>Hay dos cuadros en la pared.</b> | There are two pictures <b>on</b> the wall. |
- **en** can mean *by* with most methods of transport.
- |                 |                 |
|-----------------|-----------------|
| <b>en coche</b> | <b>by</b> car   |
| <b>en avión</b> | <b>by</b> plane |
| <b>en tren</b>  | <b>by</b> train |
- **en** can mean *into*.
- |                                   |   |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| <b>No entremos en la casa.</b>    | Let's not go <b>into</b> the house.       |
| <b>Metió la mano en su bolso.</b> | She put her hand <b>into</b> her handbag. |
- **en** is also used after certain adjectives and verbs.
- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>Es muy buena/mala en geografía.</b>               | She is very good/bad <b>at</b> geography.            |
| <b>Fueron los primeros/últimos/únicos en llegar.</b> | They were the first/last/only ones <b>to</b> arrive. |

➡ For more information on **Prepositions after verbs**, see page 150.

5 **para**

- **para** can mean *for* with a person, destination or purpose.
- |                                    |                                    |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <b>Para mí un zumo de naranja.</b> | An orange juice <b>for</b> me.     |
| <b>Salen para Cádiz.</b>           | They are leaving <b>for</b> Cádiz. |
| <b>¿Para qué lo quieres?</b>       | What do you want it <b>for</b> ?   |
- ❗ Note that you cannot end a sentence in Spanish with a preposition as you can in English.
- **para** can mean *for* with time.
- |                                       |                              |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| <b>Es para mañana.</b>                | It's <b>for</b> tomorrow.    |
| <b>una habitación para dos noches</b> | a room <b>for</b> two nights |
- **para** is also used with an infinitive with the meaning of (*in order*) *to*.
- |                                   |                                  |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <b>Lo hace para ganar dinero.</b> | He does it <b>to</b> earn money. |
| <b>Lo hice para ayudarte.</b>     | I did it <b>to</b> help you.     |



## Típ

**para mí** can be used to mean *in my opinion*.

**Para mí, es estupendo.** *In my opinion, it's great.*

### 6 por

► **por** can mean *for* when it means *for the benefit of* or *because of*.

**Lo hice por mis padres.**

I did it for my parents.

**Lo hago por ellos.**

I'm doing it for them.

**por la misma razón**

for the same reason

► **por** can mean *for* when it means *in exchange for*.

**¿Cuánto me darán por este libro?**

How much will they give me for this book?

**Te lo cambio por éste.**

I'll swap you it for this one.

► **por** can mean *by* in passive constructions.

**descubierto por unos niños**

discovered by some children

**odiado por sus enemigos**

hated by his enemies

⇒ For more information on the *Passive*, see page 122.

► **por** can mean *by* with means of transport when talking about **freight**.

**por barco**

by boat

**por tren**

by train

**por avión**

by airmail

**por correo aéreo**

by airmail

► **por** can mean *along*.

**Vaya por ese camino.**

Go along that path.

► **por** can mean *through*.

**por el túnel**

through the tunnel

► **por** can mean *around*.

**pasear por el campo**

to walk around the countryside

► **por** is used to talk vaguely about where something or someone is.

**Tiene que estar por aquí.**

It's got to be around here somewhere.

**Lo busqué por todas partes.**

I looked for him everywhere.

► **por** is used to talk about time.

**por la mañana**

in the morning

**por la tarde**

in the afternoon/evening

**por la noche**

at night

► **por** is used to talk about rates.

**90 km por hora**

90 km an hour

**un cinco por ciento**

five per cent

**Ganaron por 3 a 0.**

They won by 3 to 0.

► **por** is used in certain phrases which talk about the reason for something.

**¿por qué?**

why?, for what reason?

**por todo eso**

because of all that

**por lo que he oído**

judging by what I've heard

► **por** is used to talk about how something is done.

**llamar por teléfono**

to telephone

**Lo oí por la radio.**

I heard it on the radio.

## Grammar Extra!

**por** is often combined with other Spanish prepositions and words, usually to show movement.

**Saltó por encima de la mesa.**

She jumped over the table.

**Nadamos por debajo del puente.**

We swam under the bridge.

**Pasaron por delante de Correos.**

They went past the post office.

## Key points

- ✓ **a, de, en, para** and **por** are very frequently used prepositions which you will need to study carefully.
- ✓ Each of them has several possible meanings, which depend on the context they are used in.



## Some other common prepositions

► The following prepositions are also frequently used in Spanish.

- **antes de** before

**antes de las 5** before 5 o'clock

❗ Note that, like many other prepositions, **antes de** is used before infinitives in Spanish where in English we'd usually use the *-ing* form of the verb.

**Antes de abrir el paquete, lea las instrucciones.** Before opening the packet, read the instructions.

- **bajo** below, under

**un grado bajo cero** one degree below zero  
**bajo la cama** under the bed

❗ Note that **debajo de** is more common than **bajo** when talking about the actual position of something.

**debajo de la cama** under the bed

- **con** with

**Vino con su amigo.** She came with her friend.

❗ Note that **con** can be used after certain adjectives as well as in a few very common phrases.

**enfadado con ellos** angry with them

**un café con leche** a white coffee

**un té con limón** a (cup of) tea with a slice of lemon

- **contra** against

**Estaba apoyado contra la pared.** He was leaning against the wall.

**El domingo jugamos contra el Málaga.** We play against Malaga on Sunday.

- **debajo de** under

**debajo de la cama** under the bed

- **delante de** in front of

**lba delante de mí.** He was walking in front of me.

- **desde** from, since

**Desde aquí se puede ver.**

You can see it from here.

**Llamaron desde España.**

They phoned from Spain.

**desde otro punto de vista**

from a different point of view

**desde entonces**

from then onwards

**desde la una hasta las siete**

from one o'clock to seven

**desde la boda**

since the wedding

## Típ

Spanish uses the present tense with **desde** (meaning *since*) and the expressions **desde hace** and **hace ... que** (meaning *for*) to talk about actions that started in the past and are still going on.

**Estoy aquí desde las diez.**

I've been here since ten o'clock.

**Estoy aquí desde hace dos**

I've been here for two hours.

**horas. or Hace dos horas que**

**estoy aquí.**

If you are saying how long something has NOT happened for, in European Spanish you can use the perfect tense with **desde** and **desde hace**.

**No ha trabajado desde el accidente.**

He hasn't worked since the accident.

**No ha trabajado desde hace dos meses.**

He hasn't worked for two months.

⇒ For more information on the Present tense and the Perfect tense, see pages 69 and 115.

- **después de** after

**después del partido**

after the match

❗ Note that, like many other prepositions, **después de** is used before infinitives in Spanish where in English we'd usually use the *-ing* form of the verb.

**Después de ver la televisión me fui a la cama.**

After watching television I went to bed.

- **detrás de** behind

**Están detrás de la puerta.**

They are behind the door.

- **durante** during, for

**durante la guerra**

during the war

**Anduvieron durante 3 días.**

They walked for 3 days.



- **entre** between, among  
**entre 8 y 10** between 8 and 10  
**Hablaban entre sí.** They were talking among themselves.
- **hacia** towards, around  
**Van hacia ese edificio.** They're going towards that building.  
**hacia las tres** at around three (o'clock)  
**hacia finales de enero** around the end of January

### Grammar Extra!

**hacia** can also combine with some adverbs to show movement in a particular direction.

<b>hacia arriba</b>	upwards
<b>hacia abajo</b>	downwards
<b>hacia adelante</b>	forwards
<b>hacia atrás</b>	backwards

- **hasta** until, as far as, to, up to  
**hasta la noche** until night  
**Fueron en coche hasta Sevilla.** They drove as far as Sevilla.  
**desde la una hasta las tres** from one o'clock to three  
**Hasta ahora no ha llamado nadie.** No one has called up to now.

ⓘ Note that there are some very common ways of saying goodbye using **hasta**.

<b>¡Hasta luego!</b>	See you!
<b>¡Hasta mañana!</b>	See you tomorrow!

- **sin** without  
**sin agua/dinero** without any water/money  
**sin mi marido** without my husband

### Tip

Whereas in English we say *without a doubt*, *without a hat* and so on, in Spanish the indefinite article isn't given after **sin**.

<b>sin duda</b>	without a doubt
<b>sin sombrero</b>	without a hat

➔ For more information on **Articles**, see page 10.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

ⓘ Note that **sin** is used before infinitives in Spanish where in English we would use the *-ing* form of the verb.

**Se fue sin decir nada.** He left without saying anything.

- **sobre** on, about  
**sobre la cama** on the bed  
**Ponlo sobre la mesa.** Put it on the table.  
**un libro sobre Shakespeare** a book on or about Shakespeare  
**Madrid tiene sobre 4 millones de habitantes.** Madrid has about 4 million inhabitants.  
**Vendré sobre las cuatro.** I'll come about four o'clock.

➤ Spanish prepositions can be made up of more than one word, for example, **antes de**, **detrás de**. Here are some more common prepositions made up of two or more words:

- **a causa de** because of  
**No salimos a causa de la lluvia.** We didn't go out because of the rain.
- **al lado de** beside, next to  
**al lado de la tele** beside the TV
- **cerca de** near, close to  
**Está cerca de la iglesia.** It's near the church.
- **encima de** on, on top of  
**Ponlo encima de la mesa.** Put it on the table.
- **por encima de** above, over  
**Saltó por encima de la mesa.** He jumped over the table.
- **en medio de** in the middle of  
**Está en medio de la plaza.** It's in the middle of the square.
- **junto a** by  
**Está junto al cine.** It's by the cinema.
- **junto con** together with  
**Fue detenido junto con su hijo.** He was arrested together with his son.
- **lejos de** far from  
**No está lejos de aquí.** It isn't far from here.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.



## CONJUNCTIONS

### What is a conjunction?

A **conjunction** is a word such as *and, but, or, so, if* and *because*, that links two words or phrases of a similar type, or two parts of a sentence, for example, *Diane and I have been friends for years.*; *I left because I was bored.*

### y, o, pero, porque and si

► **y, o, pero, porque** and **si** are the most common conjunctions that you need to know in Spanish:

- **y** and **el coche y la casa** the car and the house

❗ Note that you use **e** instead of **y** before words beginning with **i** or **hi** (but not **hie**).

**Diana e Isabel** Diana and Isabel  
**madre e hija** mother and daughter  
 BUT  
**árboles y hierba** trees and grass

- **o** or **patatas fritas o arroz** chips or rice

❗ Note that you use **u** instead of **o** before words beginning with **o** or **ho**.

**diez u once** ten or eleven  
**minutos u horas** minutes or hours

❗ Note that you use **ó** instead of **o** between numerals to avoid confusion with zero.

**37 ó 38** 37 or 38

⇒ For more information on **Numbers**, see page 206.

- **pero** but **Me gustaría ir, pero estoy muy cansado.** I'd like to go, but I am very tired.

❗ Note that you use **sino** in direct contrasts after a negative.

**No es escocesa, sino irlandesa.** She's not Scottish but Irish.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- **porque** because **Ha llamado porque necesita un libro.** He called because he needs a book.

❗ Note that you don't use **porque** at the beginning of a sentence; you should use **como** instead.

**Como está lloviendo no podemos salir.** Because or As it's raining, we can't go out.

### Típ

Be careful not to mix up **porque** (meaning *because*) and **por qué** (meaning *why*).

- **que** that **Dice que me quiere.** He says that he loves me.  
**Dicen que te han visto.** They say that they've seen you.  
**Sabe que estamos aquí.** He knows that we are here.

⇒ For more information on **que** followed by the subjunctive and **que** (meaning *than*) in comparisons, see pages 136 and 26.

### Típ

In English we can say both *He says he loves me* and *He says that he loves me*, or *She knows you're here* and *She knows that you're here*. You can **NEVER** leave out **que** in Spanish in the way that you can leave out *that* in English.

- **si** if, whether **Si no estudias, no aprobarás.** If you don't study, you won't pass.  
**¿Sabes si nos han pagado ya?** Do you know if or whether we've been paid yet?  
**Avisadme si no podéis venir.** Let me know if you can't come.

⇒ For information on **si** followed by the subjunctive, see page 143.

### Típ

There is no accent on **si** when it means *if*. Be careful not to confuse **si** (meaning *if*) with **sí** (meaning *yes* or *himself/herself/yourself/themselves/ourselves*).



## Some other common conjunctions

► Here are some other common Spanish conjunctions:

- **como** as  
**Como es domingo, puedes quedarte en la cama.** As it's Sunday, you can stay in bed.

- **cuando** when  
**Cuando entré estaba leyendo.** She was reading when I came in.

⇒ For information on **cuando** followed by the subjunctive, see page 140.

- **pues** then, well  
**Tengo sueño. – ¡Pues, vete a la cama!** I'm tired. – Then go to bed!

**Pues, no lo sabía.** Well, I didn't know.

**Pues, como te iba contando ...** Well, as I was saying ...

- **mientras** while (referring to time)  
**Lava tú mientras yo seco.** You wash while I dry.  
**Él leía mientras yo cocinaba.** He would read while I cooked.

⇒ For information on **mientras** followed by the subjunctive, see page 140.

- **mientras que** whereas  
**Isabel es muy dinámica mientras que Ana es más tranquila.** Isabel is very dynamic whereas Ana is more laid-back.

- **aunque** although, even though  
**Me gusta el francés, aunque prefiero el alemán.** I like French although I prefer German.  
**Seguí andando aunque me dolía mucho la pierna.** I went on walking even though my leg hurt a lot.

## Grammar Extra!

**aunque** is also used to mean *even if*. In this case, it is followed by the subjunctive.

⇒ For more information on the **Subjunctive**, see page 134.

## Split conjunctions

In English we have conjunctions which are made up of two parts (*both ... and*, *neither ... nor*). Spanish also has conjunctions which have more than one part, the commonest of which are probably **ni ... ni** (meaning *neither ... nor*) and **o ... o** (meaning *either ... or*):

- **ni ... ni** neither ... nor  
**¡Ni Carlos ni Sofía vinieron.** or **Neither Carlos nor Sofía came.**  
**No vinieron ni Carlos ni Sofía.**

⚠ Note that if you're putting **ni ... ni** after the verb you must put **no** before the verb.

**No tengo ni hermanos ni hermanas.** I have neither brothers nor sisters.

- **o ... o** either ... or

**Puedes tomar o helado o yogur.** You can have either ice cream or yoghurt.

## Key points

- ✓ **y, o, pero, porque** and **si** are the most common conjunctions that you need to know in Spanish.
- ✓ Use **e** rather than **y** before words beginning with **i** or **hi** (but not with **hie**).
- ✓ Use **u** rather than **o** before words beginning with **o** or **ho**.
- ✓ **que** very often means *that*. *That* is often missed out in English, but **que** can never be left out in Spanish.
- ✓ Some conjunctions such as **ni ... ni** and **o ... o** consist of two parts.



**SPELLING**

**1 Sounds that are spelled differently depending on the letter that follows**

- ▶ Certain sounds are spelled differently in Spanish depending on what letter follows them. For example, the hard [k] sound heard in the English word *car* is usually spelled:
    - **c** before **a**, **o** and **u**
    - **qu** before **e** and **i**
  - ▶ This means that the Spanish word for *singer* is spelled **cantante** (pronounced [kan-tan-tay]); the word for *coast* is spelled **costa** (pronounced [ko-sta]); and the word for *cure* is spelled **cura** (pronounced [koo-ra]).
  - ▶ However, the Spanish word for *cheese* is spelled **queso** (pronounced [kay-so]) and the word for *chemistry* is spelled **química** (pronounced [kee-mee-ka]).
- [i]** Note that although the letter **k** is not much used in Spanish, it is found in words relating to *kilos*, *kilometres* and *kilograms*; for example **un kilo** (meaning *a kilo*); **un kilogramo** (meaning *a kilogram*); **un kilómetro** (meaning *a kilometre*).
- ▶ Similarly, the [g] sound heard in the English word *gone* is spelled:
    - **g** before **a**, **o** and **u**
    - **gu** before **e** and **i**
  - ▶ This means that the Spanish word for *cat* is spelled **gato** (pronounced [ga-toe]); the word for *goal* is spelled **gol** (pronounced [gol]); and the word for *worm* is spelled **gusano** (pronounced [goo-sa-no]).
  - ▶ However, the Spanish word for *war* is spelled **guerra** (pronounced [gair-ra]) and the word for *guitar* is spelled **guitarra** (pronounced [ghee-tar-ra]).

**2 Letters that are pronounced differently depending on what follows**

- ▶ Certain letters are pronounced differently depending on what follows them. As we have seen, when **c** comes before **a**, **o** or **u**, it is pronounced like a [k]. When it comes before **e** or **i**, in European Spanish it is pronounced like the [th] in the English word *pith* and in Latin American Spanish it is pronounced like the [s] in *sing*.
- ▶ This means that **casa** (meaning *house*) is pronounced [ka-sa], but **centro** (meaning *centre*) is pronounced [then-tro] in European Spanish and [sen-tro] in Latin American Spanish. Similarly, **cita** (meaning *date*) is pronounced [the-ta] in European Spanish and [see-ta] in Latin American Spanish.
- ▶ In the same way, when **g** comes before **a**, **o** or **u**, it is pronounced like the [g] in *gone*. When it comes before **e** or **i**, however, it is pronounced like the [ch] in *loch*, as it is pronounced in Scotland.
- ▶ This means that **gas** (meaning *gas*) is pronounced [gas] but **gente** (meaning *people*) is pronounced [chen-tay]. Similarly, **gimnasio** (meaning *gym*) is pronounced [cheem-na-see-o].

**3 Spelling changes that are needed in verbs to reflect the pronunciation**

- ▶ Because **c** sounds like [k] before **a**, **o** and **u**, and like [th] or [s] before **e** and **i**, you sometimes have to alter the spelling of a verb when adding a particular ending to ensure the word reads as it is pronounced:
  - In verbs ending in **-car** (which is pronounced [kar]), you have to change the **c** to **qu** before endings starting with an **e** to keep the hard [k] pronunciation. So the **yo** form of the preterite tense of **sacar** (meaning *to take out*) is spelled **saqué**. This spelling change affects the preterite and the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-car**.
  - In verbs ending in **-cer** and **-cir** (which are pronounced [ther] and [thir] or [ser] and [sir]), you have to change the **c** to **z** before endings starting with **a** or **o** to keep the soft [th/s] pronunciation. So while the **yo** form of the preterite tense of **hacer** is spelled **hice**, the **él/ella/usted** form is spelled **hizo**. This spelling change affects the ordinary present tense as well as the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-cer** or **-cir**.



► Because **g** sounds like the [g] of *gone* before **a**, **o** and **u**, and like the [ch] of *loch* before **e** and **i**, you also sometimes have to alter the spelling of a verb when adding a particular ending to ensure the verb still reads as it is pronounced:

- In verbs ending in **-gar** (which is pronounced [gar]), you have to change the **g** to **gu** before endings starting with an **e** or an **i** to keep the hard [g] pronunciation. So the **yo** form of the preterite tense of **pagar** (meaning *to pay*) is spelled **pagué**. This spelling change affects the preterite and the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-gar**.
- In verbs ending in **-ger** and **-gir** (which are pronounced [cher] and [chir]), you have to change the **g** to **j** before endings starting with **a** or **o** to keep the soft [ch] pronunciation. So while the **él/ella/usted** form of the present tense of **coger** (meaning *to take* or *to catch*) is spelled **coge**, the **yo** form is spelled **cojo**. This spelling change affects the ordinary present tense as well as the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-ger** or **-gir**.

► Because **gui** sounds like [ghee] in verbs ending in **-guir**, but **gua** and **guo** sound like [gwa] and [gwo], you have to drop the **u** before **a** and **o** in verbs ending in **-guir**. So while the **él/ella/usted** form of the present tense of **seguir** (meaning *to follow*) is spelled **sigue**, the **yo** form is spelled **sigo**. This spelling change affects the ordinary present tense as well as the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-guir**.

► Finally, although **z** is always pronounced [th] in European Spanish and [s] in Latin American Spanish, in verbs ending in **-zar** the **z** spelling is changed to **c** before **e**. So, while the **él/ella/usted** form of the preterite tense of **cruzar** is spelled **cruzó**, the **yo** form is spelled **crucé**. This spelling change affects the preterite and the present subjunctive of verbs ending in **-zar**.

#### 4 Spelling changes that are needed when making nouns and adjectives plural

- In the same way that you have to make some spelling changes when modifying the endings of certain verbs, you sometimes have to change the spelling of nouns and adjectives when making them plural.
- This affects nouns and adjectives ending in **-z**. When adding the **-es** ending of the plural, you have to change the **z** to **c**.

<b>una vez</b>	once, one time	→	<b>dos veces</b>	twice, two times
<b>una luz</b>	a light	→	<b>unas luces</b>	some lights
<b>capaz</b>	capable ( <i>singular</i> )	→	<b>capaces</b>	capable ( <i>plural</i> )

► The following table shows the usual spelling of the various sounds discussed above:

	Usual spelling				
	before a	before o	before u	before e	before i
[k] sound (as in <i>cap</i> )	<b>ca:</b> casa house	<b>co:</b> cosa thing	<b>cu:</b> cubo bucket	<b>que:</b> queso cheese	<b>qui:</b> química chemistry
[g] sound (as in <i>gap</i> )	<b>ga:</b> gato cat	<b>go:</b> gordo fat	<b>gu:</b> gusto taste	<b>gue:</b> guerra war	<b>gui:</b> guitarra guitar
[th] sound (as in <i>pith</i> ) (pronounced [s] in Latin America)	<b>za:</b> zapato shoe	<b>zo:</b> zorro fox	<b>zu:</b> zumo juice	<b>ce:</b> cero zero	<b>ci:</b> cinta ribbon
[ch] sound (as in <i>loch</i> )	<b>ja:</b> jardín garden	<b>jo:</b> joven young	<b>ju:</b> jugar to play	<b>ge:</b> gente people	<b>gi:</b> gigante giant

ⓘ Note that because **j** is still pronounced [ch] even when it comes before **e** or **i**, there are quite a number of words that contain **je** or **ji**; for example,

<b>el jefe/la jefa</b>	the boss
<b>el jerez</b>	sherry
<b>el jersey</b>	jersey
<b>el jinete</b>	jockey
<b>la jirafa</b>	giraffe
<b>el ejemplo</b>	the example
<b>dije/dijiste</b>	I said/you said
<b>dejé</b>	I left

Similarly, because **z** is also pronounced [th] or [s] even when it comes before **i** or **e**, there are one or two exceptions to the spelling rules described above; for example, **el zigzag** (meaning *zigzag*) and **la zeta** (the name of the letter **z** in Spanish).



## STRESS

## Which syllable to stress

- ▶ Most words can be broken up into **syllables**. These are the different sounds that words are broken up into. They are shown in this section by | and the stressed syllable is underlined.
- ▶ There are some very simple rules to help you remember which part of the word to stress in Spanish, and when to write an accent.
- ▶ Words **DON'T** have a written acute accent if they follow the normal stress rules for Spanish. If they do not follow the normal stress rules, they **DO** need an accent.

## Típ

The accent that shows stress is always an **acute** accent in Spanish (´). To remember which way an acute accents slopes try thinking of this saying:

*It's low on the left, with the height on the right.*

## 1 Words ending in a vowel or -n or -s

- ▶ Words ending in a vowel (a, e, i, o or u) or **-n** or **-s** are normally stressed on the **last syllable but one**. If this is the case, they do **NOT** have any written accents.

<b>ca sa</b>	house	<b>ca sas</b>	houses
<b>pa la bra</b>	word	<b>pa la bras</b>	words
<b>tar de</b>	afternoon	<b>tar des</b>	afternoons
<b>ha bla</b>	he/she speaks	<b>ha blan</b>	they speak
<b>co rre</b>	he/she runs	<b>co rren</b>	they run

- ▶ Whenever words ending in a vowel or **-n** or **-s** are **NOT** stressed on the last syllable but one, they have a written accent on the vowel that is stressed.

<b>úl ti mo</b>	last
<b>jó ve nes</b>	young people
<b>crí me nes</b>	crimes

## 2 Words ending in a consonant other than -n or -s

- ▶ Words ending in a consonant (a letter that isn't a vowel) other than **-n** or **-s** are normally stressed on the **last syllable**. If this is the case, they do **NOT** have an accent.

<b>re loj</b>	clock, watch
<b>ver dad</b>	truth
<b>trac tor</b>	tractor

- ▶ Whenever words ending in a consonant other than **-n** or **-s** are **NOT** stressed on the last syllable, they have an accent.

<b>ca rác ter</b>	character
<b>dí fí cil</b>	difficult
<b>fá cil</b>	easy

## 3 Accents on feminine and plural forms

- ▶ The same syllable is stressed in the plural form of adjectives and nouns as in the singular. To show this, you need to:

- add an accent in the plural in the case of unaccented nouns and adjectives of more than one syllable ending in **-n**

<b>or den</b>	order	<b>ór de nes</b>	orders
<b>e xá men</b>	exam	<b>e xá me nes</b>	exams
BUT: <b>tren</b>	train	<b>tre nes</b>	trains

- ▶ Note that in the case of one-syllable words ending in **-n** or **-s**, such as **tren** above, no accent is needed in the plural, since the stress falls naturally on the last syllable but one thanks to the plural **-s** ending.

- drop the accent in the plural form of nouns and adjectives ending in **-n** or **-s** which have an accent on the last syllable in the singular

<b>au to bús</b>	bus	<b>au to bu ses</b>	buses
<b>re vo lu ción</b>	revolution	<b>re vo lu cio nes</b>	revolutions

- ▶ The feminine forms of nouns or adjectives whose masculine form ends in an accented vowel followed by **-n** or **-s** do **NOT** have an accent.

<b>un francés</b>	a Frenchman
<b>una francesa</b>	a French woman



**Tip**

Just because a word has a written accent in the singular does not necessarily mean it has one in the plural, and vice versa.

**jo|ven**

Ends in **n**, so rule is to stress last syllable but one; follows rule, so **no** accent needed in singular

**lec|ción**

Ends in **n**, so rule is to stress last syllable but one; breaks rule, so accent **is** needed in singular

**jó|ve|nes**

Ends in **s**, so rule is to stress last syllable but one; breaks rule, so accent **is** needed in plural to keep stress on **jo-**

**lec|cio|nes**

Ends in **s**, so rule is to stress last syllable but one; follows rule, so **no** accent needed in plural to keep stress on **-cio-**

**4 Which vowel to stress in vowel combinations**

- ▶ The vowels **i** and **u** are considered to be **weak**. The vowels **a**, **e** and **o** are considered to be **strong**.
- ▶ When a weak vowel (**i** or **u**) combines with a strong one (**a**, **e** or **o**), they form **ONE** sound that is part of the **SAME** syllable. Technically speaking, this is called a **diphthong**. The strong vowel is emphasized more.

**bai|le**  
**cie|rra**  
**boi|na**  
**pei|ne**  
**cau|sa**

dance  
he/she/it closes  
beret  
comb  
cause

**Tip**

To remember which are the weak vowels, try thinking of this saying:  
*U and I are weaklings and always lose out to other vowels!*

- ▶ When **i** is combined with **u** or **u** with **i** (the two weak vowels), they also form **ONE** sound within the **SAME** syllable; there is more emphasis on the second vowel.

**ciudad**  
**fui**

city, town  
I went

- ▶ When you combine two strong vowels (**a**, **e** or **o**), they form **TWO** separate sounds and are part of **DIFFERENT** syllables.

**ca|er**  
**ca|os**  
**fe|o**

to fall  
chaos  
ugly

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

**5 Adding accents to some verb forms**

- ▶ When object pronouns are added to the end of certain verb forms, an accent is often required to show that the syllable stressed in the verb form does not change. These verb forms are:

- the **gerund** whenever one or more pronouns are added

**comprando**  
**comprándo(se)lo**

buying  
buying it (for him/her/them)

- the **infinitive**, when followed by two pronouns

**vender**  
**vendérselas**

to sell  
to sell them to him/her/them

- **imperative** forms

**compra**  
**cómpralo**  
**hagan**  
**háganselo**

buy  
buy it  
do  
do it for him/her/them

BUT:

**comprad**  
**compradlo**

buy  
buy it

- ➔ For more information on **Gerunds**, **Infinitives** and the **Imperative**, see pages 125, 144 and 85.

**6 Accents on adjectives and adverbs**

- ▶ Adjectives ending in **-ísimo** always have an accent on **-ísimo**. This means that any other accents are dropped.

**caro** →  
expensive  
**difícil** →  
difficult

**carísimo**  
very expensive  
**difícilísimo**  
very difficult

- ▶ Accents on adjectives are **NOT** affected when you add **-mente** to turn them into adverbs.

**fácil** →  
easy

**fácilmente**  
easily



## The acute accent used to show meaning

- The acute accent is often used to distinguish between the written forms of some words which are pronounced the same but have a different meaning or function.

Without an accent		With an accent	
<b>mi</b>	my	<b>mí</b>	me
<b>tu</b>	your	<b>tú</b>	you
<b>te</b>	you	<b>té</b>	tea
<b>si</b>	if	<b>sí</b>	yes; himself
<b>el</b>	the	<b>él</b>	he
<b>de</b>	of	<b>dé</b>	give
<b>solo</b>	alone; by oneself	<b>sólo</b>	only
<b>mas</b>	but	<b>más</b>	more

Han robado **mi** coche.

A **mí** no me vio.

¿Te gusta **tu** trabajo?

**Tú**, ¿qué opinas?

...**si** no viene

**Sí** que lo sabe.

**El** puerto está cerca.

**Él** lo hará.

Vino **solo**.

**Sólo** lo sabe él.

They've stolen my car.

He didn't see me.

Do you like your job?

What do you think?

...if he doesn't come

Yes, he does know.

The harbour's nearby.

He'll do it.

He came alone or by himself.

Only he knows.

- The acute accent is often used on the demonstrative pronouns (**éste/ésta**, **aqué/aquella**, **ése/ésa** and so on) to distinguish them from the demonstrative adjectives (**este/esta**, **aquel/aquella**, **ese/esa** and so on).

**Me gusta esta** casa. (= adjective)

I like this house.

**Me quedo con ésta**. (= pronoun)

I'll take this one.

¿Ves **aquellos** edificios? (= adjective)

Can you see those buildings?

**Aquellos** son más bonitos. (= pronoun)

Those are prettier.

- ⓘ Note that no accent is given on the neuter pronouns **esto**, **eso** and **aquello** since there is no adjective form with which they might be confused.

- ⇒ For more information on **Demonstrative adjectives** and **Demonstrative pronouns**, see pages 30 and 67.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

- An accent is needed on question words in direct and indirect questions as well as after expressions of uncertainty.

¿**Cómo** estás?

How are you?

**Dime cómo** estás.

Tell me how you are.

**Me preguntó cómo** estaba.

He asked me how I was.

¿**Con quién** viajaste?

Who did you travel with?

¿**Dónde** encontraste eso?

Where did you find that?

**No sé dónde** está.

I don't know where it is.

- ⇒ For more information on **Questions**, see page 160.

- An accent is also needed on exclamation words.

¡**Qué** asco!

How revolting!

¡**Qué** horror!

How awful!

¡**Qué** raro!

How strange!

¡**Cuánta** gente!

What a lot of people!

### Key points

- ✓ When deciding whether or not to write an accent on a word, think about how it sounds and what letter it ends in, as there are certain rules to say when an accent should be used.
- ✓ The vowels **i** and **u** are considered to be weak. The vowels **a**, **e** and **o** are considered to be strong. They can combine in a number of ways.
- ✓ Accents are added to written forms of words which are pronounced the same but have a different meaning, for example, **mi/mí**, **tu/tú** and so on.
- ✓ Accents are also added to most demonstrative pronouns so that they are not confused with demonstrative adjectives.
- ✓ Adjectives ending in **-ísimo** always have an accent on **-ísimo**, but no accent is added when adverbs are formed by adding **-mente** to adjectives.
- ✓ Question words used in direct and indirect questions as well as exclamation words always have an acute accent.



NUMBERS

1	uno (un, una)	31	treinta y uno (un, una)
2	dos	40	cuarenta
3	tres	41	cuarenta y uno (un, una)
4	cuatro	50	cincuenta
5	cinco	52	cincuenta y dos
6	seis	60	sesenta
7	siete	65	sesenta y cinco
8	ocho	70	setenta
9	nueve	76	setenta y seis
10	diez	80	ochenta
11	once	87	ochenta y siete
12	doce	90	noventa
13	trece	99	noventa y nueve
14	atorce	100	cien (ciento)
15	quince	101	ciento uno (un, una)
16	dieciséis	200	doscientos/doscientas
17	diecisiete	212	doscientos/doscientas doce
18	dieciocho	300	trescientos/trescientas
19	diecinueve	400	cuatrocientos/cuatrocientas
20	veinte	500	quinientos/quinientas
21	veintiuno (veintiún, veintiuna)	600	seiscientos/seiscientas
22	veintidós	700	setecientos/setecientas
23	veintitrés	800	ochocientos/ochocientas
24	veinticuatro	900	novecientos/novecientas
25	veinticinco	1000	mil
26	veintiséis	1001	mil (y) uno (un, una)
27	veintisiete	2000	dos mil
28	veintiocho	2500	dos mil quinientos/quinientas
29	veintinueve	1.000.000	un millón
30	treinta		(in English: 1,000,000)

EJEMPLOS

Vive en el número diez.  
 en la página diecinueve  
 un diez por ciento  
 un cien por cien(to)

EXAMPLES

He lives at number ten.  
 on page nineteen  
 10%  
 100%

1 uno, un or una?

- Use **uno** when counting, unless referring to something or someone feminine.
- Use **un** before a masculine noun and **una** before a feminine noun even when the nouns are plural.

<b>un</b> hombre	one man
<b>una</b> mujer	one woman
<b>treinta y un</b> días	thirty-one days
<b>treinta y una</b> noches	thirty-one nights
<b>veintiún</b> años	twenty-one years
<b>veintiuna</b> chicas	twenty-one girls

2 cien or ciento?

- Use **cien** before both masculine and feminine nouns as well as before **mil** (meaning *thousand*) and **millones** (meaning *million* in the plural):

<b>cien</b> libros	one hundred books
<b>cien</b> mil hombres	one hundred thousand men
<b>cien</b> millones	one hundred million

- Use **ciento** before other numbers.

<b>ciento</b> un perros	one hundred and one dogs
<b>ciento</b> una ovejas	one hundred and one sheep
<b>ciento</b> cincuenta	one hundred and fifty

- ⓘ Note that you don't translate the *and* in 101, 220 and so on.

- Make **doscientos/doscientas**, **trescientos/trescientas**, **quinientos/quinientas** and so on agree with the noun in question.

<b>doscientas</b> veinte libras	two hundred and twenty pounds
<b>quinientos</b> alumnos	five hundred students

- ⓘ Note that **setecientos** and **setecientas** have no **i** after the first **s**. Similarly, **novecientos** and **novecientas** have an **o** rather than the **ue** you might expect.

3 Full stop or comma?

- Use a full stop, not a comma, to separate thousands and millions in figures.

<b>700.000</b> (setecientos mil)	700,000 (seven hundred thousand)
<b>5.000.000</b> (cinco millones)	5,000,000 (five million)

- Use a comma instead of a decimal point to show decimals in Spanish.

<b>0,5</b> (cero coma cinco)	0.5 (nought point five)
<b>3,4</b> (tres coma cuatro)	3.4 (three point four)



1st	primero (1 <sup>o</sup> ), primer (1 <sup>er</sup> ), primera (1 <sup>a</sup> )
2nd	segundo (2 <sup>o</sup> ), segunda (2 <sup>a</sup> )
3rd	tercero (3 <sup>o</sup> ), tercer (3 <sup>er</sup> ), tercera (3 <sup>a</sup> )
4th	cuarto (4 <sup>o</sup> ), cuarta (4 <sup>a</sup> )
5th	quinto (5 <sup>o</sup> ), quinta (5 <sup>a</sup> )
6th	sexto (6 <sup>o</sup> ), sexta (6 <sup>a</sup> )
7th	séptimo (7 <sup>o</sup> ), séptima (7 <sup>a</sup> )
8th	octavo (8 <sup>o</sup> ), octava (8 <sup>a</sup> )
9th	noveno (9 <sup>o</sup> ), novena (9 <sup>a</sup> )
10th	décimo (10 <sup>o</sup> ), décima (10 <sup>a</sup> )
100th	centésimo (100 <sup>o</sup> ), centésima (100 <sup>a</sup> )
101st	centésimo primero (101 <sup>o</sup> ), centésima primera (101 <sup>a</sup> )
1000th	milésimo (1000 <sup>o</sup> ), milésima (1000 <sup>a</sup> )

## EJEMPLOS

Vive en el quinto (piso).

Llegó tercero.

## EXAMPLES

He lives on the fifth floor.

He came in third.

## Típ

Shorten **primero** (meaning *first*) to **primer**, and **tercero** (meaning *third*) to **tercer** before a masculine singular noun.

**su primer cumpleaños**  
**el tercer premio**

his first birthday  
the third prize

ⓘ Note that when you are writing these numbers in figures, don't write *1st*, *2nd*, *3rd* as in English. Use **1<sup>o</sup>**, **1<sup>a</sup>**, **1<sup>er</sup>**, **2<sup>o</sup>**, **2<sup>a</sup>** and **3<sup>o</sup>**, **3<sup>a</sup>**, **3<sup>er</sup>** as required by the noun.

**la 2<sup>a</sup> lección**  
**el 3<sup>er</sup> premio**

the 2nd lesson  
the 3rd prize

4 **primero, segundo, tercero or uno, dos, tres?**

▶ Apart from **primero** (meaning *first*) up to **décimo** (meaning *tenth*), as well as **centésimo** (meaning *one hundredth*) and **milésimo** (meaning *one thousandth*), the ordinal numbers tend not to be used very much in Spanish. Cardinal numbers (ordinary numbers) are used instead.

**Carlos tercero**  
**Alfonso trece**

Carlos the third  
Alfonso the thirteenth

⇒ For numbers used in dates, see page 211.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## LA HORA

¿Qué hora es?

Es la una menos veinte.

Es la una menos cuarto.

Es la una.

Es la una y diez.

Es la una y cuarto.

Es la una y media.

Son las dos menos veinticinco.

Son las dos menos cuarto.

Son las dos.

Son las dos y diez.

Son las dos y cuarto.

Son las dos y media.

Son las tres.

## THE TIME

What time is it?

It's twenty to one.

It's (a) quarter to one.

It's one o'clock.

It's ten past one.

It's (a) quarter past one.

It's half past one.

It's twenty-five to two.

It's (a) quarter to two.

It's two o'clock.

It's ten past two.

It's (a) quarter past two.

It's half past two.

It's three o'clock.

## Típ

Use **son las** for all times not involving **una** (meaning *one*).

¿A qué hora?

a medianoche

a mediodía

a la una (del mediodía)

a las ocho (de la tarde)

a las 9:25 or a las nueve (y)

veinticinco

a las 16:50 or a las dieciséis (y)

cincuenta

At what time?

at midnight

at midday

at one o'clock (in the afternoon)

at eight o'clock (in the evening)

at nine twenty-five

at 16:50 or sixteen fifty

ⓘ Note that in Spanish, as in English, you can also tell the time using the figures you see on a digital clock or watch or on a 24-hour timetable.

## LA FECHA

Los días de la semana

lunes

martes

miércoles

jueves

viernes

sábado

domingo

## THE DATE

The days of the week

Monday

Tuesday

Wednesday

Thursday

Friday

Saturday

Sunday



## ¿Cuándo?

**el lunes**  
**los lunes**  
**todos los lunes**  
**el martes pasado**  
**el viernes que viene**  
**el sábado que viene no, el otro**  
**dentro de tres sábados**

## When?

on Monday  
 on Mondays  
 every Monday  
 last Tuesday  
 next Friday  
 a week on Saturday  
 two weeks on Saturday

ⓘ Note that days of the week DON'T have a capital letter in Spanish.

## Los meses

**enero**  
**febrero**  
**marzo**  
**abril**  
**mayo**  
**junio**  
**julio**  
**agosto**  
**septiembre**  
**octubre**  
**noviembre**  
**diciembre**

## Months of the year

January  
 February  
 March  
 April  
 May  
 June  
 July  
 August  
 September  
 October  
 November  
 December

## ¿Cuándo?

**en febrero**  
**el 1 or uno de diciembre**  
**en 1998 (mil novecientos**  
**noventa y ocho)**  
**el 15 de diciembre de 2003**  
**el año dos mil**  
**dos mil cinco**

## When?

in February  
 on December 1st or first  
 December  
 in 1998 (nineteen ninety-eight)  
 on 15th December, 2003  
 (the year) two thousand  
 two thousand and five

## ¿Qué día es hoy?

**Es...**  
**lunes 26 de febrero**  
**domingo 1 de octubre**  
**lunes veintiséis de febrero**  
**domingo uno de octubre**

## What day is it today?

**It's...**  
 Monday, 26th February  
 Sunday, 1st October  
 Monday, the twenty-sixth of  
 February  
 Sunday, the first of October

ⓘ Note that months of the year are DON'T have a capital letter in Spanish.

For further explanation of grammatical terms, please see pages viii-xii.

## Tip

Although in English we use *first, second, third* and so on in dates, in Spanish you use the equivalent of *one, two, three* and so on.

**el dos de mayo**

the second of May

## FRASES ÚTILES

## ¿Cuándo?

**hoy**  
**esta mañana**  
**esta tarde**  
**esta noche**

## ¿Con qué frecuencia?

**todos los días**  
**cada dos días**  
**una vez por semana**  
**dos veces por semana**  
**una vez al mes**

## ¿Cuándo pasó?

**por la mañana**  
**por la noche**  
**ayer**  
**ayer por la mañana**  
**ayer por la tarde**  
**ayer por la noche**  
**anoche**  
**anteayer**  
**hace una semana**  
**hace quince días**  
**la semana pasada**  
**el año pasado**

## ¿Cuándo va a pasar?

**mañana**  
**mañana por la mañana**  
**mañana por la tarde**  
**mañana por la noche**  
**pasado mañana**  
**dentro de dos días**  
**dentro de una semana**  
**dentro de quince días**  
**el mes que viene**  
**el año que viene**

## USEFUL PHRASES

## When?

today  
 this morning  
 this afternoon  
 this evening

## How often?

every day  
 every other day  
 once a week  
 twice a week  
 once a month

## When did it happen?

in the morning  
 in the evening  
 yesterday  
 yesterday morning  
 yesterday afternoon/evening  
 yesterday evening/last night  
 last night  
 the day before yesterday  
 a week ago  
 two weeks ago  
 last week  
 last year

## When is it going to happen?

tomorrow  
 tomorrow morning  
 tomorrow afternoon/evening  
 tomorrow evening/night  
 the day after tomorrow  
 in two days' time  
 in a week's time  
 in two weeks' time  
 next month  
 next year



## MAIN INDEX

- a** 15, 145, 147, 148, 149, 150, 180-182  
**a** 10, 15, 16  
**a + el** 12, 57, 180  
**a causa de** 191  
**a lo mejor** 17  
**a:** personal 50, 182  
 abstract nouns 12  
**acabar de** 148, 149  
 accents 200-205  
 active 122, 124  
 acute accent 200  
**adjectives** 19-40, 168  
 adjectives:  
 agreement 19, 20, 21, 22, 23  
 answers 165  
 comparative and superlative 19, 26, 27  
 demonstrative 24, 30, 31, 204  
 endings 19, 20, 21, 22, 23  
 feminine 19, 20, 21, 22, 23  
 indefinite 24, 39  
 in exclamations 24, 34, 205  
 participles used as 81  
 plural 19, 21, 22  
 position 19, 24, 25  
 possessive 24, 35-38, 53  
 shortened forms 22, 23  
 singular 19, 20, 21  
 spelling changes 29, 198  
 used with **ser** or **estar** 81, 82  
 word order 19, 24  
**adónde** 161, 162  
**adverbs** 166-177  
 comparative and superlative 169, 170  
 word order 177  
**after** 189  
**against** 188  
 agreement: of adjectives 19, 20, 21, 22, 23  
 of articles 1, 11, 15  
 of past participle 123  
 of possessive adjectives 35-38  
 of possessive pronouns 56-57  
**al** 12, 57, 180  
**al + infinitive** 182
- al lado de** 191  
**al que** 62, 63  
**algo** 58, 60  
**alguien** 58, 60  
**algun** 22, 23, 39  
**alguna** 39, 58  
**algunas** 39, 58  
**alguno** 22, 23, 58, 60  
**algunos** 39, 58  
**although** 194  
**alto** 167  
**among** 190  
**an** 10, 15  
**and** 192  
**anoche** 171  
**answers** 165  
**antes** 171  
**antes de** 137, 144, 188  
**antes de que** 136  
**any** 15, 39  
**anybody** 58, 59, 60  
**anything** 58, 59, 60  
**apenas** 171  
**aquel** 30, 31, 68  
**aquél** 67, 68  
**aquella** 30, 31, 67, 68  
**aquella** 67, 68  
**aquellas** 30, 31, 68  
**aquellas** 67, 68  
**aquello** 67, 68  
**aquellos** 30, 31, 68  
**aquellos** 67, 68  
**aquí** 171  
**-ar verbs** 72  
**-ar verbs:** conditional 100, 101  
 future 97  
 gerund 127  
 imperative 85, 87  
 imperfect 110, 111  
 imperfect subjunctive 141  
 past participle 115, 116  
 perfect 115, 116  
 pluperfect 119  
 present continuous 84  
 present simple 72  
 present subjunctive 137  
 preterite 104, 105  
**articles** 10-18, 190  
**as** 193, 194  
**as ... as** 28  
**at** 180, 181, 184  
**aun** 172  
**aún** 172  
**aunque** 140, 194  
**bajo** 168, 188  
**barato** 168  
**bastante** 175
- bastar** 132  
**be** 80  
**bien** 167, 170  
**buen** 22  
**bueno** 22, 27  
**buscar** 50  
**but** 192  
**by** 122, 186  
**cada** 39  
**cada uno** 58  
 cardinal numbers 206-207  
**cien** 16, 23  
**ciento** 23  
**cierto** 16  
**claro** 168, 172  
**como** 193, 194  
**cómo** 161, 163  
 comparative adjectives 19, 26, 27, 28  
 comparative adverbs 169, 170  
 comparisons 26, 27, 169, 170, 174, 183  
 compound nouns 8  
**con** 54, 149, 152, 167, 188  
**con + mí** 54  
**con + sí** 54  
**con + ti** 54  
**conditional** 100-103  
 conditional: irregular verbs 102  
 conditional: reflexive verbs 103  
 conjugations 69, 72, 73, 75  
**conjunctions** 192-195, 134, 167  
**conmigo** 54  
**consigo** 54  
 consonants 201  
**contigo** 54  
 continuous tenses 82, 84, 125  
**contra** 188  
**cuál** 64  
**cuál** 161, 162, 163  
**cuáles** 161, 162, 163  
**cualquier** 23  
**cualquiera** 23, 58  
**cuando** 140, 194  
**cuánto** 161, 162  
**cuánto** 32, 34, 161, 162  
**cuántos** 161  
**cuyo** 64  
**dates** 13, 209-210  
**days of the week** 4, 13, 209, 210  
**de** 27, 145, 148, 149, 151, 182, 183, 204  
**de + el** 12, 182  
**de manera** 167  
**de quién** 163  
**de quienes** 163  
**dé** 204  
**deber** 146
- decir** 147  
**definite article** 10, 11-14, 36, 53  
 definite article:  
 with parts of the body 36  
**dejar** 146, 148  
**dejar caer** 147  
**del** 12, 57, 182  
**del que** 62, 63  
**demasiado** 175  
**demonstrative**  
 adjectives 24, 30, 31, 204  
**demonstrative**  
 pronouns 41, 67, 68, 204  
**derecho** 168  
 describing words see **adjectives**  
**desde** 79, 114, 118, 121, 129, 130, 189  
**desde hace** 118, 189  
**desde hacía** 114, 121  
**desde...hasta** 189  
**después de** 144, 189  
**did** 105  
**didn't** 105  
**diferente** 25  
**difícil** 183  
 diphthongs 202  
 direct object 49, 153  
 direct object pronouns 46, 47, 52  
 direct questions 164  
 doing words see **verbs**  
**doler** 155  
**dónde** 161, 162  
**e** 192  
**each** 39  
**each other** 96  
**either ... or** 195  
**el** 1, 5, 11, 42, 54, 204  
**el cual** 64  
**el de** 57  
**el instead of la** 11  
**el mío** 56, 57  
**el nuestro** 56, 57  
**el que** 61, 62, 63, 64  
**el suyo** 56, 57  
**el tuyo** 56, 57  
**el vuestro** 56, 57  
**él** 42, 54, 70, 204  
**ella** 42, 54  
**ellas** 42, 44, 54  
**ellos** 42, 44, 54  
**en** 149, 152, 184-185  
**en cuanto** 140  
**encantar** 155  
 endings:  
 adjectives 19, 20, 21, 22, 23  
 adverbs 167  
 nouns 2-7  
**entre** 55, 190  
**-er verbs:** conditional 100, 101  
 future 97  
 gerund 127
- er verbs:** imperative 86, 87  
 imperfect 112  
 imperfect subjunctive 141  
 past participle 115  
 perfect 115, 116  
 pluperfect 119  
 present continuous 84  
 present simple 73, 74  
 present subjunctive 137  
 preterite 104, 105  
**esa** 30, 31, 68  
**ésa** 67, 68  
**esas** 30, 31  
**ésas** 67  
**ese** 30, 31, 68  
**ése** 67, 68  
**eso** 67, 68  
**esos** 30, 31, 68  
**esos** 67, 68  
**esperar** 50  
**esta** 30, 68  
**ésta** 67, 68  
**estar** 80-83, 84, 125  
**estas** 30, 68  
**éstas** 67, 68  
**este** 30, 68  
**éste** 67, 68  
**esto** 67, 68  
**estos** 68  
**éstos** 67, 68  
**even if, even though** 194  
**every** 39, 40  
**everybody** 58  
**everything** 58  
 exclamations: adjectives used in 24, 34, 205  
**exterior** 21  
**fácil** 183  
**faltar** 155  
 feminine adjectives 19, 20, 21, 22, 23  
 feminine nouns 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 11  
**few: a few** 59  
**for** 185, 186, 189  
**from** 181, 182, 189  
**from ... to** 182, 189  
**fuerte** 168  
**future tense** 97-99  
 future tense:  
 irregular verbs 98, 99  
 reflexive verbs 99  
 gender 1, 2, 11, 15  
**gerund** 84, 125-128  
 gerund: accents added to 203  
 gerund: irregular verbs 127  
 gerund: used with object pronouns 47, 50, 51, 52, 203  
**going to** 97, 180  
**gran** 23
- grande** 23, 25, 27, 28  
**gustar** 154, 155, 156  
**gustar más** 155  
**haber** 99, 115, 116, 120, 121, 129, 130, 131, 159, 177  
**había** 116, 130  
**hace ... que** 118, 130, 189  
**hacer** 129, 146  
**hacer falta** 130, 136, 144, 155  
**hacia** 190  
**hacia abajo** 190  
**hacia adelante** 190  
**hacia arriba** 190  
**hacia atrás** 190  
**hacia ... que** 114, 121  
**hasta** 55, 189, 190  
**hasta que** 140  
**hay** 116, 130  
**hay que** 131  
**he** 42  
**her** 46, 49, 54  
**hers** 37  
**herself** 54, 91  
**him** 46, 49, 54  
**himself** 54, 91  
**his** 37  
**how** 161, 162  
**how much/many** 32  
**I** 42  
**if** 54, 143, 193, 204  
**imperative** 85-90, 94, 145  
 imperative:  
 accents added to 203  
 irregular verbs 86  
 used with direct object pronouns 47, 50, 88, 89  
 word order 88, 89  
 imperfect continuous 125  
 imperfect subjunctive 134, 141, 142, 143  
**imperfect tense** 110-114, 104, 121  
 irregular verbs 113  
 reflexive verbs 114  
**impersonal se** 96, 124, 133  
**impersonal verbs** 129-133  
**importar** 155  
**in** 183, 184  
**in order to** 185  
**indefinite adjectives** 24, 39  
**indefinite article** 15-16, 190  
**indefinite pronouns** 41, 58  
 indicative 136, 140, 143  
 indirect object 49  
**indirect object pronouns** 49, 50, 52, 53, 154  
 indirect questions 33, 164, 205  
**inferior** 21  
**infinitives** 69, 144-153, 128  
 infinitives:  
 accents added to 203



infinitives: after **al** 182  
 infinitives: after another  
 verb 134, 135, 145-153, 156  
 infinitives: after prepositions  
 144-153, 178, 185, 188,  
 189, 191  
 infinitives:  
 used in instructions 89  
 infinitives: used with direct  
 object pronouns  
 47, 50, 51, 52, 203  
 -ing 82, 84, 125, 126, 127,  
 128, 156  
 instructions see **imperative**  
**interesár** 155  
**interrogative**  
 adjectives 24, 32  
**interrogative**  
 pronouns 41, 65  
 invariable adjectives 22  
 inversion 161-163  
 -ir verbs: conditional 100, 101  
 -ir verbs: future 97  
 -ir verbs: gerund 127  
 -ir verbs: imperative 86, 87  
 -ir verbs: imperfect 112  
 -ir verbs:  
 imperfect subjunctive 141  
 -ir verbs: past participle 115  
 -ir verbs: perfect 115, 116  
 -ir verbs: pluperfect 119  
 -ir verbs:  
 present continuous 84  
 -ir verbs: present simple 75  
 -ir verbs:  
 present subjunctive 137  
 -ir verbs: preterite 104, 105  
**ir a** 97, 180  
**ir** with gerund 125  
 irregular comparative and  
 superlative adjectives 27, 28  
 irregular comparative and  
 superlative adverbs 170  
 irregular verbs 69, 70  
 irregular verbs: conditional 102  
 irregular verbs:  
 future tense 98, 99  
 irregular verbs: imperative 86  
 irregular verbs:  
 imperfect tense 113  
 irregular verbs: passive 123  
 irregular verbs:  
 perfect tense 116, 117  
 irregular verbs:  
 pluperfect tense 120  
 irregular verbs:  
 present tense 76, 77  
 irregular verbs: preterite 106  
 irregular verbs:  
 subjunctive 137, 138, 142  
 29, 203  
**-ísimo**  
 42, 46, 129, 130, 131,  
 132, 133  
*its* 35

*itself* 91  
 jobs 16  
**la** 1, 5, 11, 46, 47, 52  
**la de** 57  
**la mía** 56, 57  
**la nuestra** 56, 57  
**la que** 61, 62, 63, 64  
**las de** 56, 57  
**la suya** 56, 57  
**la tuya** 56, 57  
**la vuestra** 56, 57  
 languages 4, 186  
**las** 11, 46, 47, 52  
**las de** 57  
**las mías** 56, 57  
**las nuestras** 56, 57  
**las que** 61, 62, 63, 64  
**las suyas** 56, 57  
**las tuyas** 56, 57  
**las vuestras** 56, 57  
**le** 49, 50, 51, 52, 154, 155  
 least 26, 27, 169, 170  
**les** 49, 50, 51, 52, 154, 155  
 less 26, 169, 170  
 let's 85, 89  
**llevar (puesto)** 16  
**llevar:**  
 with time expression 126  
**llover** 129  
**lo** 17, 18, 46, 47, 52  
**lo de** 17  
**lo que** 17, 63  
**los** 11, 46, 47, 52  
**los de** 57  
**los míos** 56, 57  
**los nuestros** 56, 57  
**los que** 61, 62, 63, 64  
**los suyos** 56, 57  
**los tuyos** 56, 57  
**los vuestros** 56, 57  
**luego** 173  
**mal** 22, 167, 170  
**malo** 22, 27  
**mas** 204  
**más** 26, 27, 169, 170, 175,  
 176, 204  
**más de** 170, 183  
 masculine adjectives 19-23  
 masculine and feminine forms  
 of words 2, 3, 5, 6, 19-23  
 masculine  
 nouns 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 11  
**mayor** 21, 27, 28  
**me** 46, 47, 49, 50, 52, 93,  
 103, 109, 114, 118, 154  
**me** 49, 54  
**medio** 25  
**mejor** 21, 27, 28, 131, 170  
**menor** 27, 28  
**menos** 26, 27, 55, 169,  
 170, 176  
**menos de** 170, 183  
**mi** 35, 204  
**mí** 54, 204

**mía** 37, 56  
**mías** 37, 56  
**mientras** 140, 194  
**mientras que** 194  
**mil** 16, 23  
**millones** 23  
**mine** 37, 56  
**mío** 37, 56  
**míos** 37, 56  
**mirar** 50  
**mis** 35  
**mismo** 25  
 months 4, 210-211  
**more** 26, 169, 170  
**most** 26, 27, 169, 170  
**mucho** 39, 58, 170, 175  
**muy** 28, 173  
**my** 35  
**myself** 91-95  
**nada** 59, 60, 159  
**nadie** 159  
 naming words see **nouns**  
 nationalities: adjectives 20  
**negatives** 157-159  
 negative questions 164  
**neither ... nor** 195  
**nevar** 129  
**never** 158, 159  
**ni ... ni** 159, 195  
**ningún** 22, 159  
**ninguna** 59, 159  
**ninguno** 22, 59, 60, 159  
**no** 105, 157, 158, 164,  
 165, 173  
**no creer que** 136  
**no ... jamás** 158  
**no longer** 158  
**no ... más** 158, 159  
**no more** 158  
**no ... nada** 158  
**no ... nadie** 158  
**no ... ni ... ni** 158  
**no ... ninguno** 158  
**no ... nunca** 158  
**no pensar que** 136  
**no ... tampoco** 158  
**nobody** 58, 158, 159  
**nos** 46, 47, 49, 50, 52, 93,  
 96, 103, 109, 114, 118, 154  
**nosotras** 42, 44, 54  
**nosotros** 42, 44, 54  
**not** 157, 158, 164, 165  
**nothing** 41, 59, 158, 159  
**nouns** 1-9  
 nouns: endings 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7  
 nouns:  
 feminine 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 11  
 nouns:  
 masculine 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 11  
 nouns: plural 1, 7  
 nouns:  
 singular 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 9  
**nuestra** 35, 37, 56  
**nuestras** 35, 37, 56

**nuestro** 35, 37, 56  
**nuestros** 35, 37, 56  
**nuevo** 25  
**numbers** 24, 206-208  
**nunca** 159  
**o** 192  
**o ... o** 195  
**ó** 192  
 object 122  
 object  
 pronouns 41, 46-53, 88,  
 89, 117, 120, 128, 157, 203  
 of 182  
 on 13, 185  
 one 93, 118, 121, 208, 209  
 one another 96  
 oneself 91  
 or 192  
 orders and  
 instructions see **imperative**  
 ordinal numbers 208  
**os** 46, 47, 49, 50, 52, 93, 96,  
 103, 109, 114, 118, 154  
 other 39, 59  
**otra** 39, 59  
**otras** 39, 59  
**otro** 16, 39, 59  
**otros** 39, 59  
 our 35  
 ours 56  
 ourselves 91-95  
**para** 137, 185-186  
**para que** 136  
**parece que** 132, 136  
 participles:  
 past 81, 115, 116, 117, 119,  
 120, 122, 123, 126, 159  
 participles: present see **gerund**  
 parts of  
 the body 12, 36, 53, 95  
**pasar(se)** 126  
**passive** 81, 122-124, 186  
 passive: irregular verbs 123  
 past participles 81, 115, 116,  
 117, 119, 120, 122, 123,  
 126, 159  
 past participles:  
 irregular 116, 120  
**past perfect** see **pluperfect**  
**peor** 21, 27, 28, 170  
**pequeño** 27, 28  
**perfect tense** 115-118, 189  
 perfect tense:  
 irregular verbs 116  
 perfect tense:  
 reflexive verbs 117, 118  
 perfect tense: word order 177  
**pero** 192  
 personal **a** 50, 58, 182  
**personal pronouns** 41, 42-55  
**pluperfect tense** 119-121  
 pluperfect tense:  
 irregular verbs 120

pluperfect tense:  
 reflexive verbs 120, 121  
 pluperfect tense:  
 word order 177  
 plural 7, 8, 9, 21, 22  
**pobre** 25  
**poco** 59, 170, 175  
**poder** 146  
**por** 122, 152, 186, 187  
**por debajo de** 187  
**por delante de** 187  
**por encima de** 187, 191  
**por lo general** 17  
**por lo menos** 17  
**por qué** 65, 161, 193  
**porque** 192, 193  
 possession 36, 183  
**possessive**  
 adjectives 24, 35-38, 53  
 possessive adjectives:  
 agreement 35, 36, 37, 38  
**possessive**  
 pronouns 41, 56-57  
**prepositions** 178-191  
 prepositions: after  
 adjectives 181, 183, 185, 188  
 prepositions: after verbs 145,  
 147, 148, 149, 150-153  
 prepositions: followed by  
 infinitive 144-153, 178, 185,  
 188, 189, 191  
**present continuous** 82, 84  
**present participle** see **gerund**  
 present perfect  
 see **perfect tense**  
**present simple** 71-80  
 present  
 subjunctive 134-140, 174  
**present tense** 71-84, 189  
 present tense:  
 irregular verbs 76  
 present tense:  
 reflexive verbs 92  
**preterite** 104-109, 110  
 preterite: irregular verbs 106  
 preterite: reflexive verbs 109  
 preterite:  
 spelling changes 108, 109  
 prices and rates 13, 180  
**primer** 22, 208  
**primero** 22, 208  
**pronouns** 41-68  
 pronouns:  
 demonstrative 41, 67, 68  
 pronouns:  
 direct object 46, 47, 48, 52  
 pronouns: indefinite 41, 58  
 pronouns: indirect  
 object 49, 50, 52, 53, 154  
 pronouns: interrogative 41, 65  
 pronouns:  
 object 41, 46-53, 88,  
 89, 117, 120, 128, 157, 203

pronouns:  
 possessive 41, 56, 57  
 pronouns: reflexive  
 41, 91-94, 99, 103, 109, 117,  
 114, 117, 118, 120, 121  
 pronouns:  
 relative 41, 61, 62, 63, 64  
 pronouns:  
 subject 41-45, 70-76  
 pronouns: word  
 order 47, 50, 51, 52, 53  
 pronunciation 197-200  
**pues** 194  
**que** 26, 27, 28, 29, 61, 62, 63,  
 64, 135, 136, 169, 170, 193  
**qué** 16, 32, 65, 66, 161,  
 162, 163  
**qué ... mas** + adjective 34  
**qué ... tan** + adjective 34  
**quedar** 155  
**querer** 146  
**querer decir** 147  
 question words 32, 33, 65, 66,  
 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 205  
**questions** 65, 66, 160-165  
 questions: indirect 33, 164  
**quien** 61, 62  
**quién** 65, 66, 161, 162, 163  
**quienes** 61  
**quiénés** 65, 66, 162, 163  
**quizás** 173, 174  
 radical-changing verbs 76, 77,  
 107, 108, 139  
**rápido** 168  
**recién** 167  
**reflexive pronouns**  
 41, 91-96, 99, 103, 109,  
 114, 117, 188, 120, 121  
 reflexive pronouns:  
 word order 94  
**reflexive verbs**  
 53, 91-96, 99, 103, 109, 114,  
 117, 188, 120, 121, 124  
 reflexive verbs: conditional 103  
 reflexive verbs: future tense 99  
 reflexive verbs:  
 imperfect tense 114  
 reflexive verbs:  
 orders and instructions 94  
 reflexive verbs:  
 perfect tense 117, 118  
 reflexive verbs:  
 pluperfect tense 120, 121  
 reflexive verbs:  
 present tense 92, 93, 95, 96  
**relative pronouns** 41, 61-64  
 reported  
 questions 33, 164, 205  
 root-changing verbs  
 see radical-changing verbs  
**saber** 146  
**salvo** 55  
**same** 25



- se** 52, 91, 92, 93, 95, 96, 99, 103, 109, 114, 117, 118, 120, 121, 133  
**se cree** 133  
**se dice** 133  
**se puede** 133  
**según** 55  
**ser** 80-83, 122, 123, 131, 132  
*she* 42  
**si** 54, 143, 192, 193, 204  
**sí** 54, 165, 174, 193, 204  
**siempre** 79, 174  
**sin** 16, 137, 190, 191  
**sin que** 136  
*since* 79, 114, 118, 121, 130, 189  
 singular adjectives 19, 20, 21  
 singular nouns 1-6, 9  
**sino** 192  
**sobre** 191  
**solo** 204  
**sólo** 174, 204  
*some* 15, 39  
*somebody* 58  
*something* 58  
**spelling** 196-199  
**stress** 200-205  
**su** 35  
 subject 122, 154  
**subject pronouns** 41-45, 70, 72, 73, 74, 76  
**subjunctive** 134-143, 174  
 subjunctive:  
   imperfect 141, 142, 143  
 subjunctive:  
   irregular verbs 138, 139, 142  
 subjunctive:  
   present 134-140, 174  
**superlative adjectives** 26, 27  
**superlative adverbs** 169-170  
**sus** 35  
**suya** 37, 56  
**suyas** 37, 56  
**suyo** 37, 56  
**suyos** 37, 56  
 syllables 200-202  
**tan ... como** 28, 174  
**tan ... que** 174  
**tanto** 28, 39, 59, 175  
**tanto ... como** 28, 170  
**te** 46, 47, 50, 93, 103, 109, 114, 118, 154, 204  
**té** 204  
**tener** 16, 116, 182  
**tener que** 146  
*tense* 69  
 tenses: conditional 100-103  
 tenses: future 97-99  
 tenses: imperfect 110-114  
 tenses: perfect 115-118  
 tenses: pluperfect 119-121  
 tenses: present 71-84  
 tenses: present continuous 84  
 tenses: preterite 104-109  
 tenses: sequence of 139, 140  
**tercer** 22, 208  
**tercero** 22, 208  
**than** 26, 27, 28, 29, 169, 170  
**that** 30, 61, 62, 63, 64, 67, 68, 193  
*that one/those ones* 67, 68  
**the** 10, 11, 12  
*their* 35  
*theirs* 37  
*them* 46, 49, 54  
*themselves* 54, 91  
*there* 76  
*these* 30, 67  
*they* 42  
*this* 30, 67  
*this one/these ones* 67, 68  
*those* 30, 67  
**ti** 54  
 time 13, 80, 209  
**todavía** 174, 177  
**todo** 59  
**tratarse de** 133  
**tu** 35, 42, 204  
**tú** 42, 44, 70, 204  
**tus** 35  
**tuya** 37, 56  
**tuyas** 37, 56  
**tuyo** 37, 56  
**tuyos** 37, 56  
**u** 192  
**un** 1, 15, 22, 206, 207  
**un poco** 175  
**una** 1, 15, 206, 207  
**unas** 15  
*under* 188  
**uno** 15  
**uno ... (el) otro** 59  
**unos** 15  
**unos .. (los) otros** 60  
*us* 46, 49, 54  
**usted** 42, 44, 54  
**ustedes** 42, 44, 54  
**vale la pena** 132  
**valer** 132  
**vamos a** 89  
**varios** 39, 60  
**Vd.** 42, 54  
**Vds.** 42, 54  
**venir** with gerund 125  
**verbal idioms** 154-156  
 verb forms: after  
   prepositions 178, 188, 189  
**verbs** 69-156  
 verbs: active 122, 124  
 verbs: followed by **a** 148  
 verbs: followed by  
   an infinitive 145, 146  
   **de** 148  
   direct object 153  
   **direct object** 153  
   **de** 144  
   **irregular** 69  
   **prepositions** after 145, 147, 148, 149, 150-153  
   **regular** 69  
   **spelling changes** 197  
**verdad** 131, 136, 160, 164, 165  
**viejo** 25  
**vosotras** 42, 44, 54  
**vosotros** 42, 44, 54  
 vowels 200-202  
**vuestra** 35, 37, 56  
**vuestras** 35, 37, 56  
**vuestro** 35, 37, 56  
**vuestros** 35, 37, 56  
*we* 42  
*weather* 129  
*what* 17, 32, 65, 66, 163  
*what (a) ...!* 34, 205  
*when* 140, 161, 162, 163, 194  
*where* 161, 162, 164  
*whether* 193  
*which* 32, 33, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 163  
*which one(s)* 65  
*while* 194  
*who* 61, 62  
*whom* 61, 62  
*whose* 64, 66, 163  
*why* 161, 193  
*with* 54, 55, 152, 188  
*without* 16, 136, 190  
*will* 97, 98, 99  
 word order:  
   in imperatives 88, 89  
 word order:  
   in indirect questions 33, 164  
 word order: in questions 160, 161, 163, 164  
 word order:  
   with adjectives 19, 24  
 word order: with adverbs 177  
 word order: with gerunds 128  
 word order:  
   with negatives 157, 158, 159  
 word order: with object  
   pronouns 50, 52, 117, 120  
 word order:  
   with reflexive pronouns 94  
*would* 100  
**y** 192  
**ya** 175  
**years** 184, 210  
**yes** 79, 204  
**yo** 42, 70  
*you* 42, 46, 49, 54  
*you: ways of saying* 44  
*your* 35  
*yours* 37  
*yourself* 54, 91  
*yourselves* 54, 91

## Introduction

The **Verb Tables** in the following section contain 83 tables of Spanish verbs (some regular and some irregular) in alphabetical order. Each table shows you the following forms: **Present**, **Preterite**, **Future**, **Present Subjunctive**, **Imperfect**, **Conditional**, **Imperative** and the **Past Participle** and **Gerund**. For more information on these tenses, how they are formed, when they are used and so on, you should look at the section on **Verbs** in the main text on pages 69–156.

In order to help you use the verbs shown in Verb Tables correctly, there are also a number of example phrases at the bottom of each page to show the verb as it is used in context.

In Spanish there are both **regular** verbs (their forms follow the normal rules) and **irregular** verbs (their forms do not follow the normal rules). The regular verbs in these tables are:

**hablar** (regular **-ar** verb, Verb Table 39)

**comer** (regular **-er** verb, Verb Table 16)

**vivir** (regular **-ir** verb, Verb Table 81)

The irregular verbs are shown in full.

The **Verb Index** at the end of this section contains over 1200 verbs, each of which is cross-referred to one of the verbs given in the Verb Tables. The table shows the patterns that the verb listed in the index follows.



► **abolir** (to abolish)**PRESENT**

(nosotros/as)	abolimos
(vosotros/as)	abolís

\* Present tense only used in persons shown

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	abolí
(tú)	aboliste
(él/ella/usted)	abolió
(nosotros/as)	abolimos
(vosotros/as)	abolisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	abolieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	aboliré
(tú)	abolirás
(él/ella/usted)	abolirá
(nosotros/as)	aboliremos
(vosotros/as)	aboliréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	abolirán

**IMPERATIVE**

abolid

**GERUND**

aboliendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

Hay que **abolirlo**. It ought to be abolished.

**Han abolido** la pena de muerte. They have abolished the death penalty.

**Abolieron** la esclavitud. They abolished slavery.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **abrir** (to open)**PRESENT**

(yo)	abro
(tú)	abres
(él/ella/usted)	abre
(nosotros/as)	abrimos
(vosotros/as)	abris
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	abren

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	abrí
(tú)	abriste
(él/ella/usted)	abrió
(nosotros/as)	abrimos
(vosotros/as)	abristeis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	abrieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	abriré
(tú)	abrirás
(él/ella/usted)	abrirá
(nosotros/as)	abriremos
(vosotros/as)	abriréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	abrirán

**IMPERATIVE**

abre / abrid

**GERUND**

abriendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

No **abras** ese grifo. Don't turn on that tap.

**Han abierto** un restaurante cerca de aquí. They've opened a new restaurant near here.

**Abrirán** todas las puertas de la catedral. They'll open all the doors of the cathedral.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

not used

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	abolía
(tú)	abolías
(él/ella/usted)	abolía
(nosotros/as)	abolíamos
(vosotros/as)	abolíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	abolían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	aboliría
(tú)	abolirías
(él/ella/usted)	aboliría
(nosotros/as)	aboliríamos
(vosotros/as)	aboliríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	abolirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

abolido

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	abra
(tú)	abras
(él/ella/usted)	abra
(nosotros/as)	abramos
(vosotros/as)	abráis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	abran

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	abría
(tú)	abrias
(él/ella/usted)	abría
(nosotros/as)	abriáramos
(vosotros/as)	abriáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	abrían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	abriría
(tú)	abrirías
(él/ella/usted)	abriría
(nosotros/as)	abriríamos
(vosotros/as)	abriríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	abrirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

abierto



► **actuar** (to act)**PRESENT**

(yo)	actúo
(tú)	actúas
(él/ella/usted)	actúa
(nosotros/as)	actuamos
(vosotros/as)	actuáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	actúan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	actué
(tú)	actuaste
(él/ella/usted)	actuó
(nosotros/as)	actuamos
(vosotros/as)	actuasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	actuaron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	actuaré
(tú)	actuarás
(él/ella/usted)	actuará
(nosotros/as)	actuaremos
(vosotros/as)	actuaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	actuarán

**IMPERATIVE**

actúa / actúad

**GERUND**

actuando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Actúa de una forma muy rara.* He's acting very strangely.*Actuó en varias películas.* He was in several films.*¿Quién actuará en su próxima película?* Who will be in his next film?**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	actúe
(tú)	actúes
(él/ella/usted)	actúe
(nosotros/as)	actuemos
(vosotros/as)	actuéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	actúen

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	actuaba
(tú)	actuabas
(él/ella/usted)	actuaba
(nosotros/as)	actuábamos
(vosotros/as)	actuabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	actuaban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	actuaría
(tú)	actuarías
(él/ella/usted)	actuaría
(nosotros/as)	actuaríamos
(vosotros/as)	actuaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	actuarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

actuado

**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**► **adquirir** (to acquire)**PRESENT**

(yo)	adquiero
(tú)	adquieres
(él/ella/usted)	adquiere
(nosotros/as)	adquirimos
(vosotros/as)	adquirís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	adquieren

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	adquirí
(tú)	adquiriste
(él/ella/usted)	adquirió
(nosotros/as)	adquirimos
(vosotros/as)	adquiristeis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	adquirieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	adquiriré
(tú)	adquirirás
(él/ella/usted)	adquirirá
(nosotros/as)	adquiriremos
(vosotros/as)	adquiriréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	adquirirán

**IMPERATIVE**

adquiere / adquirid

**GERUND**

adquiriendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Hemos adquirido una colección de sellos.* We've bought a stamp collection.*Al final adquirirán los derechos de publicación.* They will get the publishing rights in the end.*¿Lo adquirirías por ese precio?* Would you buy it for that price?**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.****PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	adquiera
(tú)	adquieras
(él/ella/usted)	adquiera
(nosotros/as)	adquiramos
(vosotros/as)	adquiráis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	adquieran

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	adquiría
(tú)	adquirías
(él/ella/usted)	adquiría
(nosotros/as)	adquiríamos
(vosotros/as)	adquiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	adquirían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	adquiriría
(tú)	adquirirías
(él/ella/usted)	adquiriría
(nosotros/as)	adquiriríamos
(vosotros/as)	adquiriríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	adquirirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

adquirido



## ▶ **almorzar** (to have lunch)

### PRESENT

(yo)	almuerzo
(tú)	almuerzas
(él/ella/usted)	almuerza
(nosotros/as)	almorzamos
(vosotros/as)	almorzáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	almuerzan

### PRETERITE

(yo)	almorcé
(tú)	almorzaste
(él/ella/usted)	almorzó
(nosotros/as)	almorzamos
(vosotros/as)	almorzasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	almorzaron

### FUTURE

(yo)	almorzaré
(tú)	almorzarás
(él/ella/usted)	almorzará
(nosotros/as)	almorzaremos
(vosotros/as)	almorzaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	almorzarán

### IMPERATIVE

almuerza / almorzad

### GERUND

almorzando

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿A qué hora **almuerzas**? What time do you have lunch?

**Almorcé** en un bar. I had lunch in a bar.

**Mañana almorzaremos** todos juntos. We'll all have lunch together tomorrow.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

## ▶ **andar** (to walk)

### PRESENT

(yo)	ando
(tú)	andas
(él/ella/usted)	anda
(nosotros/as)	andamos
(vosotros/as)	andáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	andan

### PRETERITE

(yo)	anduve
(tú)	anduviste
(él/ella/usted)	anduvo
(nosotros/as)	anduvimos
(vosotros/as)	anduvisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	anduvieron

### FUTURE

(yo)	andaré
(tú)	andarás
(él/ella/usted)	andará
(nosotros/as)	andaremos
(vosotros/as)	andaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	andarán

### IMPERATIVE

anda / andad

### GERUND

andando

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

**Voy andando** al trabajo todos los días. I walk to work every day.

**Anduvimos** al menos 10 km. We walked at least 10 km.

**No sé por dónde andará.** I don't know where he will be.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	almuerce
(tú)	almuerces
(él/ella/usted)	almuerce
(nosotros/as)	almorcemos
(vosotros/as)	almorcéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	almuercen

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	almorzaba
(tú)	almorzabas
(él/ella/usted)	almorzaba
(nosotros/as)	almorzábamos
(vosotros/as)	almorzabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	almorzaban

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	almorzaría
(tú)	almorzarías
(él/ella/usted)	almorzaría
(nosotros/as)	almorzaríamos
(vosotros/as)	almorzaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	almorzarían

### PAST PARTICIPLE

almorzado

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	ande
(tú)	andes
(él/ella/usted)	ande
(nosotros/as)	andemos
(vosotros/as)	andéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	anden

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	andaba
(tú)	andabas
(él/ella/usted)	andaba
(nosotros/as)	andábamos
(vosotros/as)	andabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	andaban

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	andaría
(tú)	andarías
(él/ella/usted)	andaría
(nosotros/as)	andaríamos
(vosotros/as)	andaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	andarían

### PAST PARTICIPLE

andado



## ► **aunar** (to join together)

### PRESENT

(yo)	aúno
(tú)	aúnas
(él/ella/usted)	aúna
(nosotros/as)	aunamos
(vosotros/as)	aunáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	aúnan

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	aúne
(tú)	aúnes
(él/ella/usted)	aúne
(nosotros/as)	aunemos
(vosotros/as)	aunéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	aúnen

### PRETERITE

(yo)	auné
(tú)	aunaste
(él/ella/usted)	aunó
(nosotros/as)	aunamos
(vosotros/as)	aunasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	aunaron

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	aunaba
(tú)	aunabas
(él/ella/usted)	aunaba
(nosotros/as)	aunábamos
(vosotros/as)	aunabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	aunaban

### FUTURE

(yo)	aunaré
(tú)	aunarás
(él/ella/usted)	aunaré
(nosotros/as)	aunaremos
(vosotros/as)	aunaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	aunarán

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	aunaría
(tú)	aunarías
(él/ella/usted)	aunaría
(nosotros/as)	aunaríamos
(vosotros/as)	aunaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	aunarían

### IMPERATIVE

aúna / aunad

### PAST PARTICIPLE

aunado

### GERUND

aunando

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

El candidato **aúna** experiencia y entusiasmo. The candidate has both experience and enthusiasm.

Han **aunado** fuerzas para combatir la violencia. They've joined forces to combat violence.

Este organismo **aunará** a todos los países europeos. This organization will bring together all the countries of Europe.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

## ► **avergonzar** (to shame)

### PRESENT

(yo)	avergüenzo
(tú)	avergüenzas
(él/ella/usted)	avergüenza
(nosotros/as)	avergonzamos
(vosotros/as)	avergonzáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	avergüenzan

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	avergüencie
(tú)	avergüencas
(él/ella/usted)	avergüencie
(nosotros/as)	avergoncemos
(vosotros/as)	avergoncéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	avergüencen

### PRETERITE

(yo)	avergüencé
(tú)	avergonzaste
(él/ella/usted)	avergonzó
(nosotros/as)	avergonzamos
(vosotros/as)	avergonzasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	avergonzaron

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	avergonzaba
(tú)	avergonzabas
(él/ella/usted)	avergonzaba
(nosotros/as)	avergonzábamos
(vosotros/as)	avergonzabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	avergonzaban

### FUTURE

(yo)	avergonzaré
(tú)	avergonzarás
(él/ella/usted)	avergonzará
(nosotros/as)	avergonzaremos
(vosotros/as)	avergonzaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	avergonzarán

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	avergonzaría
(tú)	avergonzarías
(él/ella/usted)	avergonzaría
(nosotros/as)	avergonzaríamos
(vosotros/as)	avergonzaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	avergonzarían

### IMPERATIVE

avergüenza / avergonzad

### PAST PARTICIPLE

avergonzado

### GERUND

avergonzando

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

No **me avergüenzo** de nada. I'm not ashamed of anything.

Cuando me lo dijo **me avergüencé**. I was embarrassed when he told me.

**Te avergonzarás** de eso. You'll be ashamed of that.

Su actitud **avergonzó** a sus padres. His attitude embarrassed his parents.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



► **averiguar** (to find out)**PRESENT**

(yo) averiguo
(tú) averiguas
(él/ella/usted) averigua
(nosotros/as) averiguamos
(vosotros/as) averiguáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averiguan

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo) averigüe
(tú) averigües
(él/ella/usted) averigüe
(nosotros/as) averigüemos
(vosotros/as) averigüéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averigüen

**PRETERITE**

(yo) averigüé
(tú) averiguaste
(él/ella/usted) averiguó
(nosotros/as) averiguamos
(vosotros/as) averiguasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averiguaron

**IMPERFECT**

(yo) averiguaba
(tú) averiguabas
(él/ella/usted) averiguaba
(nosotros/as) averiguábamos
(vosotros/as) averiguabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averiguaban

**FUTURE**

(yo) averiguaré
(tú) averiguarás
(él/ella/usted) averiguará
(nosotros/as) averiguaremos
(vosotros/as) averiguaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averiguarán

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo) averiguaría
(tú) averiguarías
(él/ella/usted) averiguaría
(nosotros/as) averiguaríamos
(vosotros/as) averiguaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) averiguarían

**IMPERATIVE**

averigua / averiguad

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

averiguado

**GERUND**

averiguando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**¿Cuándo lo **averiguaron**? When did they find out?Lo **averiguaré** pronto. I'll find out soon.En cuanto lo **averigüe** te lo digo. I'll tell you as soon as I find out.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**► **bendecir** (to bless)**PRESENT**

(yo) bendigo
(tú) bendices
(él/ella/usted) bendice
(nosotros/as) bendecimos
(vosotros/as) bendecís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendicen

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo) bendiga
(tú) bendigas
(él/ella/usted) bendiga
(nosotros/as) bendigamos
(vosotros/as) bendigáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendigan

**PRETERITE**

(yo) bendije
(tú) bendijiste
(él/ella/usted) bendijo
(nosotros/as) bendijimos
(vosotros/as) bendijisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendijeron

**IMPERFECT**

(yo) bendecía
(tú) bendecías
(él/ella/usted) bendecía
(nosotros/as) bendecíamos
(vosotros/as) bendecíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendecían

**FUTURE**

(yo) bendeciré
(tú) bendecirás
(él/ella/usted) bendecirá
(nosotros/as) bendeciremos
(vosotros/as) bendeciréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendecirán

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo) bendeciría
(tú) bendecirías
(él/ella/usted) bendeciría
(nosotros/as) bendeciríamos
(vosotros/as) bendeciríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) bendecirían

**IMPERATIVE**

bendice / bendecid

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

bendecido

**GERUND**

bendiciendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**Dios te **bendiga**. God bless you!El sacerdote **ha bendecido** la nueva tienda. The priest has blessed the new shop.Mi padre **bendijo** la comida. My father said grace.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**



► **cab**er (to fit)**PRESENT**

(yo)	quepo
(tú)	cabes
(él/ella/usted)	cabe
(nosotros/as)	cabemos
(vosotros/as)	cabéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	caben

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	cupe
(tú)	cupiste
(él/ella/usted)	cupo
(nosotros/as)	cupimos
(vosotros/as)	cupisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cupieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	cabré
(tú)	cabrás
(él/ella/usted)	cabrá
(nosotros/as)	cabremos
(vosotros/as)	cabréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cabrán

**IMPERATIVE**

cabe / cabed

**GERUND**

cabiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Aquí no **cab**e.* There's not enough room here for it.*No **cab**íamos todos.* There wasn't enough room for all of us.*¿Crees que **cab**rá?* Do you think there will be enough room for it?**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**► **caer** (to fall)**PRESENT**

(yo)	caigo
(tú)	caes
(él/ella/usted)	cae
(nosotros/as)	caemos
(vosotros/as)	caéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	caen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	caí
(tú)	caíste
(él/ella/usted)	cayó
(nosotros/as)	caímos
(vosotros/as)	caísteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cayeron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	caeré
(tú)	caerás
(él/ella/usted)	caerá
(nosotros/as)	caeremos
(vosotros/as)	caeréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	caerán

**IMPERATIVE**

cae / caed

**GERUND**

cayendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES*****Me caí** por las escaleras.* I fell down the stairs.***Ese edificio se está cayendo.*** That building is falling down.***Se me ha caído** un guante.* I've dropped one of my gloves.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.****PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	quepa
(tú)	quepas
(él/ella/usted)	quepa
(nosotros/as)	quepamos
(vosotros/as)	quepáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	quepan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	cabía
(tú)	cabías
(él/ella/usted)	cabía
(nosotros/as)	cabíamos
(vosotros/as)	cabíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cabían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	cabría
(tú)	cabrías
(él/ella/usted)	cabría
(nosotros/as)	cabríamos
(vosotros/as)	cabríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cabrían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

cabido

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	caiga
(tú)	caigas
(él/ella/usted)	caiga
(nosotros/as)	caigamos
(vosotros/as)	caigáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	caigan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	caía
(tú)	caías
(él/ella/usted)	caía
(nosotros/as)	caíamos
(vosotros/as)	caíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	caían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	caería
(tú)	caerías
(él/ella/usted)	caería
(nosotros/as)	caeríamos
(vosotros/as)	caeríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	caerían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

caído

**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**



► **cocer** (to boil)**PRESENT**

(yo)	cuezo
(tú)	cueces
(él/ella/usted)	cuece
(nosotros/as)	cocemos
(vosotros/as)	cocéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cuecen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	cocí
(tú)	cociste
(él/ella/usted)	coció
(nosotros/as)	cocimos
(vosotros/as)	cocisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cocieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	coceré
(tú)	cocerás
(él/ella/usted)	cocerá
(nosotros/as)	coceremos
(vosotros/as)	coceréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cocerán

**IMPERATIVE**

cuece / coced

**GERUND**

cociendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Cuécelo a fuego lento.* Cook it over a gentle heat.*Aquí nos estamos cociendo.* It's boiling in here.*No lo cuezas demasiado.* Don't overcook it.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **coger** (to catch)**PRESENT**

(yo)	cojo
(tú)	coges
(él/ella/usted)	coge
(nosotros/as)	cogemos
(vosotros/as)	cogéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cogen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	cogí
(tú)	cogiste
(él/ella/usted)	cogió
(nosotros/as)	cogimos
(vosotros/as)	cogisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cogieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	cogeré
(tú)	cogerás
(él/ella/usted)	cogerá
(nosotros/as)	cogeremos
(vosotros/as)	cogeréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cogerán

**IMPERATIVE**

coge / coged

**GERUND**

cogiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***La cogí entre mis brazos.* I took her in my arms.*Estuvimos cogiendo setas.* We were picking mushrooms.*¿Por qué no coges el tren de las seis?* Why don't you get the six o'clock train?

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	cueza
(tú)	cuezas
(él/ella/usted)	cueza
(nosotros/as)	cozamos
(vosotros/as)	cozáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cuezan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	cocía
(tú)	cocías
(él/ella/usted)	cocía
(nosotros/as)	cocíamos
(vosotros/as)	cocíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cocían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	cocería
(tú)	cocerías
(él/ella/usted)	cocería
(nosotros/as)	coceríamos
(vosotros/as)	coceríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cocerían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

cocido

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	coja
(tú)	cojas
(él/ella/usted)	coja
(nosotros/as)	cojamos
(vosotros/as)	cojáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cojan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	cogía
(tú)	cogías
(él/ella/usted)	cogía
(nosotros/as)	cogíamos
(vosotros/as)	cogíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cogían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	cogería
(tú)	cogerías
(él/ella/usted)	cogería
(nosotros/as)	cogeríamos
(vosotros/as)	cogeríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cogerían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

cogido

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



► **comer** (to eat)**PRESENT**

(yo)	como
(tú)	comes
(él/ella/usted)	come
(nosotros/as)	comemos
(vosotros/as)	coméis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	comen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	comí
(tú)	comiste
(él/ella/usted)	comió
(nosotros/as)	comimos
(vosotros/as)	comisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	comieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	comeré
(tú)	comerás
(él/ella/usted)	comerá
(nosotros/as)	comeremos
(vosotros/as)	comeréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	comerán

**IMPERATIVE**

come / comed

**GERUND**

comiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

No **come** carne. He doesn't eat meat.  
 No **comas** tan deprisa. Don't eat so fast.  
 Se **ha comido** todo. He's eaten it all.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **conducir** (to drive, to lead)**PRESENT**

(yo)	conduzco
(tú)	conduces
(él/ella/usted)	conduce
(nosotros/as)	conducimos
(vosotros/as)	conducís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	conducen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	conduje
(tú)	condujiste
(él/ella/usted)	condujo
(nosotros/as)	condujimos
(vosotros/as)	condujisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	condujeron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	conduciré
(tú)	conducirás
(él/ella/usted)	conducirá
(nosotros/as)	conduciremos
(vosotros/as)	conduciréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	conducirán

**IMPERATIVE**

conduce / conducid

**GERUND**

conduciendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

**Conduces** muy bien. You are a really good driver.  
 ¿**Condujiste** tú? Was it you driving?  
 Él **los conducirá** a la mesa. He'll show you to your table.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	coma
(tú)	comas
(él/ella/usted)	coma
(nosotros/as)	comamos
(vosotros/as)	comáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	coman

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	comía
(tú)	comías
(él/ella/usted)	comía
(nosotros/as)	comíamos
(vosotros/as)	comíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	comían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	comería
(tú)	comerías
(él/ella/usted)	comería
(nosotros/as)	comeríamos
(vosotros/as)	comeríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	comerían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

comido

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	conduzca
(tú)	conduzcas
(él/ella/usted)	conduzca
(nosotros/as)	conduzcamos
(vosotros/as)	conduzcáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	conduzcan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	conducía
(tú)	conducías
(él/ella/usted)	conducía
(nosotros/as)	conducíamos
(vosotros/as)	conducíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	conducían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	conduciría
(tú)	conducirías
(él/ella/usted)	conduciría
(nosotros/as)	conduciríamos
(vosotros/as)	conduciríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	conducirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

conducido



► **construir** (to build)**PRESENT**

(yo)	construyo
(tú)	construyes
(él/ella/usted)	construye
(nosotros/as)	construimos
(vosotros/as)	construís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	construyen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	construí
(tú)	construiste
(él/ella/usted)	construyó
(nosotros/as)	construimos
(vosotros/as)	construisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	construyeron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	construiré
(tú)	construirás
(él/ella/usted)	construirá
(nosotros/as)	construiremos
(vosotros/as)	construiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	construirán

**IMPERATIVE**

construye / construid

**GERUND**

construyendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

*Están construyendo una escuela.* They are building a new school.  
*Yo solo construí el puzzle.* I did the jigsaw puzzle on my own.  
*Aquí construirán una autopista.* They're going to build a new motorway here.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	construya
(tú)	construyas
(él/ella/usted)	construya
(nosotros/as)	construyamos
(vosotros/as)	construyáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	construyan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	construía
(tú)	construías
(él/ella/usted)	construía
(nosotros/as)	construíamos
(vosotros/as)	construíaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	construían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	construiría
(tú)	construirías
(él/ella/usted)	construiría
(nosotros/as)	construiríamos
(vosotros/as)	construiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	construirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

construido

► **contar** (to tell, to count)**PRESENT**

(yo)	cuento
(tú)	cuentas
(él/ella/usted)	cuenta
(nosotros/as)	contamos
(vosotros/as)	contáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cuentan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	conté
(tú)	contaste
(él/ella/usted)	contó
(nosotros/as)	contamos
(vosotros/as)	contasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	contaron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	contaré
(tú)	contarás
(él/ella/usted)	contará
(nosotros/as)	contaremos
(vosotros/as)	contaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	contarán

**IMPERATIVE**

cuenta / contad

**GERUND**

contando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

*Venga, cuéntamelo.* Come on, tell me.  
*Nos contó un secreto.* He told us a secret.  
*Prométeme que no se lo contarás a nadie.* Promise you won't tell anyone.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	cuento
(tú)	cuentas
(él/ella/usted)	cuenta
(nosotros/as)	contemos
(vosotros/as)	contéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cuenten

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	contaba
(tú)	contabas
(él/ella/usted)	contaba
(nosotros/as)	contábamos
(vosotros/as)	contabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	contaban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	contaría
(tú)	contarías
(él/ella/usted)	contaría
(nosotros/as)	contaríamos
(vosotros/as)	contaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	contarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

contado



► **crecer** (to grow)**PRESENT**

(yo)	crezco
(tú)	creces
(él/ella/usted)	crece
(nosotros/as)	crecemos
(vosotros/as)	crecéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	crecen

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	crezca
(tú)	crezcas
(él/ella/usted)	crezca
(nosotros/as)	crezcamos
(vosotros/as)	crezcáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	crezcan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	crecí
(tú)	creciste
(él/ella/usted)	creció
(nosotros/as)	crecimos
(vosotros/as)	crecisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	crecieron

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	crecía
(tú)	crecías
(él/ella/usted)	crecía
(nosotros/as)	crecíamos
(vosotros/as)	crecíaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	crecían

**FUTURE**

(yo)	creceré
(tú)	crecerás
(él/ella/usted)	crecerá
(nosotros/as)	creceremos
(vosotros/as)	creceréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	crecerán

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	crecería
(tú)	crecerías
(él/ella/usted)	crecería
(nosotros/as)	creceríamos
(vosotros/as)	creceríaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	crecerían

**IMPERATIVE**

crece / creced

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

crecido

**GERUND**

creciendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Esas plantas crecen en Chile.* Those plants grow in Chile.*Crecimos juntos.* We grew up together.*Cuando crezca, ya verás.* You'll see, when he grows up.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**► **cruzar** (to cross)**PRESENT**

(yo)	cruzo
(tú)	cruzas
(él/ella/usted)	cruza
(nosotros/as)	cruzamos
(vosotros/as)	cruzáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cruzan

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	cruce
(tú)	cruces
(él/ella/usted)	cruce
(nosotros/as)	crucemos
(vosotros/as)	crucéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	crucen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	crucé
(tú)	cruzaste
(él/ella/usted)	cruzó
(nosotros/as)	cruzamos
(vosotros/as)	cruzasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cruzaron

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	cruzaba
(tú)	cruzabas
(él/ella/usted)	cruzaba
(nosotros/as)	cruzábamos
(vosotros/as)	cruzabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cruzaban

**FUTURE**

(yo)	cruzaré
(tú)	cruzarás
(él/ella/usted)	cruzará
(nosotros/as)	cruzaremos
(vosotros/as)	cruzaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cruzarán

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	cruzaría
(tú)	cruzarías
(él/ella/usted)	cruzaría
(nosotros/as)	cruzaríamos
(vosotros/as)	cruzaríaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cruzarían

**IMPERATIVE**

cruza / cruzad

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

cruzado

**GERUND**

cruzando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***No cruces la calle con el semáforo en rojo.* Don't cross the road when the signal's at red.*Cruzaron la carretera.* They crossed the road.*Hace tiempo que no me cruzo con él.* I haven't seen him for a long time.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**



► **cubrir** (to cover)**PRESENT**

(yo)	cubro
(tú)	cubres
(él/ella/usted)	cubre
(nosotros/as)	cubrimos
(vosotros/as)	cubris
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cubren

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	cubrí
(tú)	cubriste
(él/ella/usted)	cubrió
(nosotros/as)	cubrimos
(vosotros/as)	cubristeis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cubrieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	cubriré
(tú)	cubrirás
(él/ella/usted)	cubrirá
(nosotros/as)	cubriremos
(vosotros/as)	cubriréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cubrirán

**IMPERATIVE**

cubre / cubrid

**GERUND**

cubriendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Lo cubrieron con una manta.* They covered him with a blanket.*Estaba todo cubierto de nieve.* Everything was covered in snow.*Se cubrió de gloria.* He covered himself in glory.**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	cubra
(tú)	cubras
(él/ella/usted)	cubra
(nosotros/as)	cubramos
(vosotros/as)	cubráis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cubran

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	cubría
(tú)	cubrias
(él/ella/usted)	cubría
(nosotros/as)	cubriamos
(vosotros/as)	cubriais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cubrían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	cubriría
(tú)	cubrirías
(él/ella/usted)	cubriría
(nosotros/as)	cubriríamos
(vosotros/as)	cubriríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	cubrirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

cubierto

► **dar** (to give)**PRESENT**

(yo)	doy
(tú)	das
(él/ella/usted)	da
(nosotros/as)	damos
(vosotros/as)	dais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	di
(tú)	diste
(él/ella/usted)	dio
(nosotros/as)	dimos
(vosotros/as)	disteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	daré
(tú)	darás
(él/ella/usted)	dará
(nosotros/as)	daremos
(vosotros/as)	daréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	darán

**IMPERATIVE**

da / dad

**GERUND**

dando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Me da miedo la oscuridad.* I'm scared of the dark.*Nos dieron un par de entradas gratis.* They gave us a couple of free tickets.*Te daré el número de mi móvil.* I'll give you my mobile-phone number.**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	dé
(tú)	des
(él/ella/usted)	dé
(nosotros/as)	demos
(vosotros/as)	deis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	den

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	daba
(tú)	dabas
(él/ella/usted)	daba
(nosotros/as)	dábamos
(vosotros/as)	dabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	daban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	daría
(tú)	darías
(él/ella/usted)	daría
(nosotros/as)	daríamos
(vosotros/as)	daríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	darían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

dado



► **decir** (to say)**PRESENT**

(yo)	digo
(tú)	dices
(él/ella/usted)	dice
(nosotros/as)	decimos
(vosotros/as)	decís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dicen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	dije
(tú)	dijiste
(él/ella/usted)	dijo
(nosotros/as)	dijimos
(vosotros/as)	dijisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dijeron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	diré
(tú)	dirás
(él/ella/usted)	dirá
(nosotros/as)	diremos
(vosotros/as)	diréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dirán

**IMPERATIVE**

di / decid

**GERUND**

diciendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Pero ¿qué dices?* What are you saying?*Me lo dijo ayer.* He told me yesterday.*¿Te ha dicho lo de la boda?* Has he told you about the wedding?**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**► **dirigir** (to direct)**PRESENT**

(yo)	dirijo
(tú)	diriges
(él/ella/usted)	dirige
(nosotros/as)	dirigimos
(vosotros/as)	dirigís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dirigen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	dirigí
(tú)	dirigiste
(él/ella/usted)	dirigió
(nosotros/as)	dirigimos
(vosotros/as)	dirigisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dirigieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	dirigiré
(tú)	dirigirás
(él/ella/usted)	dirigirá
(nosotros/as)	dirigiremos
(vosotros/as)	dirigiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dirigirán

**IMPERATIVE**

dirige / dirigid

**GERUND**

dirigiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Dirijo esta empresa desde hace dos años.* I've been running this company for two years.*Hace días que no me dirige la palabra.* He hasn't spoken to me for days.*Se dirigía a la parada del autobús.* He was making his way to the bus stop.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.****PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	diga
(tú)	digas
(él/ella/usted)	diga
(nosotros/as)	digamos
(vosotros/as)	digáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	digan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	decía
(tú)	decías
(él/ella/usted)	decía
(nosotros/as)	decíamos
(vosotros/as)	decíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	decían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	diría
(tú)	dirías
(él/ella/usted)	diría
(nosotros/as)	diríamos
(vosotros/as)	diríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

dicho

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	dirija
(tú)	dirijas
(él/ella/usted)	dirija
(nosotros/as)	dirijamos
(vosotros/as)	dirijáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dirijan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	dirigía
(tú)	dirigías
(él/ella/usted)	dirigía
(nosotros/as)	dirigíamos
(vosotros/as)	dirigíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dirigían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	dirigiría
(tú)	dirigirías
(él/ella/usted)	dirigiría
(nosotros/as)	dirigiríamos
(vosotros/as)	dirigiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dirigirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

dirigido

**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**



## ▶ distinguir (to distinguish)

### PRESENT

(yo)	distingo
(tú)	distingues
(él/ella/usted)	distingue
(nosotros/as)	distinguimos
(vosotros/as)	distinguís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	distinguen

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	distinga
(tú)	distingas
(él/ella/usted)	distinga
(nosotros/as)	distingamos
(vosotros/as)	distingáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	distingan

### PRETERITE

(yo)	distinguí
(tú)	distinguiste
(él/ella/usted)	distinguió
(nosotros/as)	distinguimos
(vosotros/as)	distinguisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	distinguieron

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	distinguía
(tú)	distinguías
(él/ella/usted)	distinguía
(nosotros/as)	distinguíamos
(vosotros/as)	distinguíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	distinguían

### FUTURE

(yo)	distinguiré
(tú)	distinguirás
(él/ella/usted)	distinguirá
(nosotros/as)	distinguiremos
(vosotros/as)	distinguiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	distinguirán

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	distinguiría
(tú)	distinguirías
(él/ella/usted)	distinguiría
(nosotros/as)	distinguiríamos
(vosotros/as)	distinguiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	distinguirían

### IMPERATIVE

distingue / distinguid

### PAST PARTICIPLE

distinguido

### GERUND

distinguiendo

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

No lo **distingo** del azul. I can't tell the difference between it and the blue one.

**Se distinguió** desde lejos. You could see it from the distance.

No lo **distinguiría**. I wouldn't be able to tell them apart.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

## ▶ dormir (to sleep)

### PRESENT

(yo)	duermo
(tú)	duermes
(él/ella/usted)	duerme
(nosotros/as)	dormimos
(vosotros/as)	dormís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	duermen

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	duerma
(tú)	duermas
(él/ella/usted)	duerma
(nosotros/as)	durmamos
(vosotros/as)	durmáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	duerman

### PRETERITE

(yo)	dormí
(tú)	dormiste
(él/ella/usted)	durmió
(nosotros/as)	dormimos
(vosotros/as)	dormisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	durmieron

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	dormía
(tú)	dormías
(él/ella/usted)	dormía
(nosotros/as)	dormíamos
(vosotros/as)	dormíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dormían

### FUTURE

(yo)	dormiré
(tú)	dormirás
(él/ella/usted)	dormirá
(nosotros/as)	dormiremos
(vosotros/as)	dormiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dormirán

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	dormiría
(tú)	dormirías
(él/ella/usted)	dormiría
(nosotros/as)	dormiríamos
(vosotros/as)	dormiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	dormirían

### IMPERATIVE

duerme / dormid

### PAST PARTICIPLE

dormido

### GERUND

durmiendo

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

No **duermo** muy bien. I don't sleep very well.

**Nos dormimos** en el cine. We fell asleep at the cinema.

**Durmió** durante doce horas. He slept for twelve hours.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



► **elegir** (to choose)**PRESENT**

(yo)	elijo
(tú)	eliges
(él/ella/usted)	elige
(nosotros/as)	elegimos
(vosotros/as)	elegís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	eligen

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	elija
(tú)	elijas
(él/ella/usted)	elija
(nosotros/as)	elijamos
(vosotros/as)	elijáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	elijan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	elegí
(tú)	elegiste
(él/ella/usted)	eligió
(nosotros/as)	elegimos
(vosotros/as)	elegisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	eligieron

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	elegía
(tú)	elegías
(él/ella/usted)	elegía
(nosotros/as)	elegíamos
(vosotros/as)	elegíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	elegían

**FUTURE**

(yo)	elegiré
(tú)	elegirás
(él/ella/usted)	elegirá
(nosotros/as)	elegiremos
(vosotros/as)	elegiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	elegirán

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	elegiría
(tú)	elegirías
(él/ella/usted)	elegiría
(nosotros/as)	elegiríamos
(vosotros/as)	elegiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	elegirían

**IMPERATIVE**

elige / elegid

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

elegido

**GERUND**

eligiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

Nosotros *no elegimos* a nuestros padres, ni ellos nos *eligen* a nosotros. We don't choose our parents and neither do they choose us.  
 Creo que *ha elegido bien*. I think he's made a good choice.  
 No lo *eligieron* ellos. It wasn't they who chose it.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **empezar** (to begin)**PRESENT**

(yo)	empiezo
(tú)	empiezas
(él/ella/usted)	empieza
(nosotros/as)	empezamos
(vosotros/as)	empezáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	empiezan

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	empiece
(tú)	empieces
(él/ella/usted)	empiece
(nosotros/as)	empecemos
(vosotros/as)	empecéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	empiecen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	empecé
(tú)	empezaste
(él/ella/usted)	empezó
(nosotros/as)	empezamos
(vosotros/as)	empezasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	empezaron

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	empezaba
(tú)	empezabas
(él/ella/usted)	empezaba
(nosotros/as)	empezábamos
(vosotros/as)	empezabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	empezaban

**FUTURE**

(yo)	empezaré
(tú)	empezarás
(él/ella/usted)	empezará
(nosotros/as)	empezaremos
(vosotros/as)	empezaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	empezarán

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	empezaría
(tú)	empezarías
(él/ella/usted)	empezaría
(nosotros/as)	empezaríamos
(vosotros/as)	empezaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	empezarían

**IMPERATIVE**

empieza / empezad

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

empezado

**GERUND**

empezando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

*Empieza por aquí.* Start here.  
 ¿Cuándo *empiezas* a trabajar en el sitio nuevo? When do you start work at the new place?  
 La semana que viene *empezaremos* un curso nuevo. We'll start a new course next week.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



## ► entender (to understand)

### PRESENT

(yo)	entiendo
(tú)	entiendes
(él/ella/usted)	entiende
(nosotros/as)	entendemos
(vosotros/as)	entendéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	entienden

### PRETERITE

(yo)	entendí
(tú)	entendiste
(él/ella/usted)	entendió
(nosotros/as)	entendimos
(vosotros/as)	entendisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	entendieron

### FUTURE

(yo)	entenderé
(tú)	entenderás
(él/ella/usted)	entenderá
(nosotros/as)	entenderemos
(vosotros/as)	entenderéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	entenderán

### IMPERATIVE

entiende / entended

### GERUND

entendiendo

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

No lo *entiendo*. I don't understand.

¿*Entendiste* lo que dijo? Did you understand what she said?

Con el tiempo lo *entenderás*. You'll understand one day.

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	entienda
(tú)	entiendas
(él/ella/usted)	entienda
(nosotros/as)	entendamos
(vosotros/as)	entendáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	entiendan

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	entendía
(tú)	entendías
(él/ella/usted)	entendía
(nosotros/as)	entendíamos
(vosotros/as)	entendíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	entendían

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	entendería
(tú)	entenderías
(él/ella/usted)	entendería
(nosotros/as)	entenderíamos
(vosotros/as)	entenderíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	entenderían

### PAST PARTICIPLE

entendido

## ► enviar (to send)

### PRESENT

(yo)	envío
(tú)	envías
(él/ella/usted)	envía
(nosotros/as)	enviamos
(vosotros/as)	enviáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	envían

### PRETERITE

(yo)	envié
(tú)	enviaste
(él/ella/usted)	envió
(nosotros/as)	enviamos
(vosotros/as)	enviasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	enviaron

### FUTURE

(yo)	enviaré
(tú)	enviarás
(él/ella/usted)	enviará
(nosotros/as)	enviaremos
(vosotros/as)	enviaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	enviarán

### IMPERATIVE

envía / envíad

### GERUND

enviando

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Envíe* todos sus datos personales. Send all your personal details.

La han *enviado* a Guatemala. They've sent her to Guatemala.

Nos *enviarán* más información. They'll send us further information.

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	envíe
(tú)	envíes
(él/ella/usted)	envíe
(nosotros/as)	enviemos
(vosotros/as)	enviéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	envíen

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	enviaba
(tú)	enviabas
(él/ella/usted)	enviaba
(nosotros/as)	enviábamos
(vosotros/as)	enviabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	enviaban

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	enviaría
(tú)	enviarías
(él/ella/usted)	enviaría
(nosotros/as)	enviaríamos
(vosotros/as)	enviaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	enviarían

### PAST PARTICIPLE

enviado



▶ **erguir** (to erect)**PRESENT**

(yo)	ergo
(tú)	ergues
(él/ella/usted)	ergue
(nosotros/as)	erguimos
(vosotros/as)	erguís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	erguen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	erguí
(tú)	erguiste
(él/ella/usted)	irguió
(nosotros/as)	erguimos
(vosotros/as)	erguisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	irguieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	erguiré
(tú)	erguirás
(él/ella/usted)	erguirá
(nosotros/as)	erguiremos
(vosotros/as)	erguiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	erguirán

**IMPERATIVE**

ergue / erguid

**GERUND**

irguiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

*Irguió la cabeza con orgullo.* She lifted her head up proudly.  
*El rascacielos se erguía sobre la ciudad.* The skyscraper towered over the city.  
*Erguirán dos nuevas torres en el centro.* They're going to put up two new tower blocks in the centre.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	yerga
(tú)	yergas
(él/ella/usted)	yerga
(nosotros/as)	irgamos
(vosotros/as)	irgáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	yergan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	erguía
(tú)	erguías
(él/ella/usted)	erguía
(nosotros/as)	erguíamos
(vosotros/as)	erguiais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	erguían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	erguiría
(tú)	erguirías
(él/ella/usted)	erguiría
(nosotros/as)	erguiríamos
(vosotros/as)	erguiriais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	erguirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

erguido

▶ **errar** (to err)**PRESENT**

(yo)	yerro
(tú)	yerras
(él/ella/usted)	yerra
(nosotros/as)	erramos
(vosotros/as)	erráis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	yerran

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	erré
(tú)	erraste
(él/ella/usted)	erró
(nosotros/as)	erramos
(vosotros/as)	errasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	erraron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	erraré
(tú)	errarás
(él/ella/usted)	errará
(nosotros/as)	erraremos
(vosotros/as)	erraréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	errarán

**IMPERATIVE**

yerra / errad

**GERUND**

errando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

*Erró todas las preguntas.* He got all the questions wrong.  
*Erró el tiro.* He missed the shot.  
*Ha errado el camino.* He's lost his way.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	yerre
(tú)	yerras
(él/ella/usted)	yerre
(nosotros/as)	erremos
(vosotros/as)	erréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	yerren

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	erraba
(tú)	errabas
(él/ella/usted)	erraba
(nosotros/as)	errábamos
(vosotros/as)	errabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	erraban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	erraría
(tú)	errarías
(él/ella/usted)	erraría
(nosotros/as)	erraríamos
(vosotros/as)	errariais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	errarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

errado



► **escribir** (to write)**PRESENT**

(yo)	escribo
(tú)	escribes
(él/ella/usted)	escribe
(nosotros/as)	escribimos
(vosotros/as)	escribís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	escriben

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	escribí
(tú)	escribiste
(él/ella/usted)	escribió
(nosotros/as)	escribimos
(vosotros/as)	escribisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	escribieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	escribiré
(tú)	escribirás
(él/ella/usted)	escribirá
(nosotros/as)	escribiremos
(vosotros/as)	escribiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	escribirán

**IMPERATIVE**

escribe / escribid

**GERUND**

escribiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

Eso lo **he escrito** yo. I've written that.

**Escríbelo en la pizarra.** Write it on the blackboard.

**Nos escribimos durante un tiempo.** We wrote to each other for a while.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	escriba
(tú)	escribas
(él/ella/usted)	escriba
(nosotros/as)	escribamos
(vosotros/as)	escribáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	escriban

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	escribía
(tú)	escribías
(él/ella/usted)	escribía
(nosotros/as)	escribiáramos
(vosotros/as)	escribíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	escribían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	escribiría
(tú)	escribirías
(él/ella/usted)	escribiría
(nosotros/as)	escribiríamos
(vosotros/as)	escribiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	escribirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

escrito

► **estar** (to be)**PRESENT**

(yo)	estoy
(tú)	estás
(él/ella/usted)	está
(nosotros/as)	estamos
(vosotros/as)	estáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	están

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	estuve
(tú)	estuviste
(él/ella/usted)	estuvo
(nosotros/as)	estuvimos
(vosotros/as)	estuvisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	estuvieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	estaré
(tú)	estarás
(él/ella/usted)	estará
(nosotros/as)	estaremos
(vosotros/as)	estaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	estarán

**IMPERATIVE**

está / estad

**GERUND**

estando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

**Estoy cansado.** I'm tired.

**Estuvimos en casa de mis padres.** We went to my parents.

**¿A qué hora estarás en casa?** What time will you be home?

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	esté
(tú)	estés
(él/ella/usted)	esté
(nosotros/as)	estemos
(vosotros/as)	estéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	estén

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	estaba
(tú)	estabas
(él/ella/usted)	estaba
(nosotros/as)	estábamos
(vosotros/as)	estabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	estaban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	estaría
(tú)	estarías
(él/ella/usted)	estaría
(nosotros/as)	estaríamos
(vosotros/as)	estaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	estarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

estado



► **freír** (to fry)**PRESENT**

(yo) frío
(tú) fríes
(él/ella/usted) fríe
(nosotros/as) freímos
(vosotros/as) freís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) fríen

**PRETERITE**

(yo) freí
(tú) freíste
(él/ella/usted) frió
(nosotros/as) freímos
(vosotros/as) freísteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) frieron

**FUTURE**

(yo) freiré
(tú) freirás
(él/ella/usted) freirá
(nosotros/as) freiremos
(vosotros/as) freiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) freirán

**IMPERATIVE**

fríe / freíd

**GERUND**

friendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Fríelo en esta sartén.* Fry it in this pan.*He frito el pescado.* I've fried the fish.*Nos freíamos de calor.* We were roasting in the heat.**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo) fría
(tú) frías
(él/ella/usted) fría
(nosotros/as) friamos
(vosotros/as) friáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) frían

**IMPERFECT**

(yo) freía
(tú) freías
(él/ella/usted) freía
(nosotros/as) freíamos
(vosotros/as) freíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) freían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo) freiría
(tú) freirías
(él/ella/usted) freiría
(nosotros/as) freiríamos
(vosotros/as) freiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) freirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

frito

► **gruñir** (to grunt)**PRESENT**

(yo) gruño
(tú) gruñes
(él/ella/usted) gruñe
(nosotros/as) gruñimos
(vosotros/as) gruñís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñen

**PRETERITE**

(yo) gruñí
(tú) gruñiste
(él/ella/usted) gruñó
(nosotros/as) gruñimos
(vosotros/as) gruñisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñeron

**FUTURE**

(yo) gruñiré
(tú) gruñirás
(él/ella/usted) gruñirá
(nosotros/as) gruñiremos
(vosotros/as) gruñiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñirán

**IMPERATIVE**

gruñe / gruñid

**GERUND**

gruñendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Siempre está gruñendo.* He's always grumbling.*¡No gruñas!* Don't grumble!*No creo que el oso nos gruña.* I don't think the bear will growl at us.**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo) gruña
(tú) gruñas
(él/ella/usted) gruña
(nosotros/as) gruñamos
(vosotros/as) gruñáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo) gruñía
(tú) gruñías
(él/ella/usted) gruñía
(nosotros/as) gruñíamos
(vosotros/as) gruñíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo) gruñiría
(tú) gruñirías
(él/ella/usted) gruñiría
(nosotros/as) gruñiríamos
(vosotros/as) gruñiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) gruñirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

gruñido



## ► haber (to have (auxiliary))

### PRESENT

(yo)	he
(tú)	has
(él/ella/usted)	ha
(nosotros/as)	hemos
(vosotros/as)	habéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	han

### PRETERITE

(yo)	hube
(tú)	hubiste
(él/ella/usted)	hubo
(nosotros/as)	hubimos
(vosotros/as)	hubisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hubieron

### FUTURE

(yo)	habré
(tú)	habrás
(él/ella/usted)	habrá
(nosotros/as)	habremos
(vosotros/as)	habréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	habrán

### IMPERATIVE

not used

### GERUND

habiendo

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

¿**Has visto** eso? Did you see that?

**Ya hemos ido** a ver esa película. We've already been to see that film.

Eso nunca **había pasado** antes. That had never happened before.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

## ► hablar (to speak, to talk)

### PRESENT

(yo)	hablo
(tú)	hablas
(él/ella/usted)	habla
(nosotros/as)	hablamos
(vosotros/as)	habláis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hablan

### PRETERITE

(yo)	hablé
(tú)	hablaste
(él/ella/usted)	habló
(nosotros/as)	hablamos
(vosotros/as)	hablasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hablaron

### FUTURE

(yo)	hablaré
(tú)	hablarás
(él/ella/usted)	hablará
(nosotros/as)	hablaremos
(vosotros/as)	hablaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hablarán

### IMPERATIVE

habla / hablado

### GERUND

hablando

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

Hoy **he hablado** con mi hermana. I've spoken to my sister today.

No **hables** tan alto. Don't talk so loud.

No **se hablan**. They don't talk to each other.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	haya
(tú)	hayas
(él/ella/usted)	haya
(nosotros/as)	hayamos
(vosotros/as)	hayáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hayan

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	había
(tú)	habías
(él/ella/usted)	había
(nosotros/as)	habíamos
(vosotros/as)	habíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	habían

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	habría
(tú)	habrías
(él/ella/usted)	habría
(nosotros/as)	habríamos
(vosotros/as)	habríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	habrían

### PAST PARTICIPLE

habido

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	hable
(tú)	hables
(él/ella/usted)	hable
(nosotros/as)	hablemos
(vosotros/as)	habléis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hablen

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	hablara
(tú)	hablabas
(él/ella/usted)	hablara
(nosotros/as)	hablábamos
(vosotros/as)	hablabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hablaban

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	hablaría
(tú)	hablarías
(él/ella/usted)	hablaría
(nosotros/as)	hablaríamos
(vosotros/as)	hablaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hablarían

### PAST PARTICIPLE

hablado



► **hacer** (to do, to make)**PRESENT**

(yo)	hago
(tú)	haces
(él/ella/usted)	hace
(nosotros/as)	hacemos
(vosotros/as)	hacéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hacen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	hice
(tú)	hiciste
(él/ella/usted)	hizo
(nosotros/as)	hicimos
(vosotros/as)	hicisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hicieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	haré
(tú)	harás
(él/ella/usted)	hará
(nosotros/as)	haremos
(vosotros/as)	haréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	harán

**IMPERATIVE**

haz / haced

**GERUND**

haciendo

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	haga
(tú)	hagas
(él/ella/usted)	haga
(nosotros/as)	hagamos
(vosotros/as)	hagáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hagan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	hacía
(tú)	hacías
(él/ella/usted)	hacía
(nosotros/as)	hacíamos
(vosotros/as)	hacíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	hacían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	haría
(tú)	harías
(él/ella/usted)	haría
(nosotros/as)	haríamos
(vosotros/as)	haríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	harían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

hecho

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**Lo **haré** yo mismo. I'll do it myself.¿Quién **hizo** eso? Who did that?Quieres que **haga** las camas? Do you want me to make the beds?

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **hay** (there is, there are)**PRESENT**

hay

**PRETERITE**

hubo

**FUTURE**

habrá

**IMPERATIVE**

not used

**GERUND**

habiendo

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

haya

**IMPERFECT**

había

**CONDITIONAL**

habría

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

habido

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**¿**Hay** más galletas? Are there any biscuits left?No **había** nadie. There wasn't anybody there.El domingo **habrá** una manifestación. There will be a demonstration on Sunday.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



▶ **ir** (to go)**PRESENT**

(yo)	voy
(tú)	vas
(él/ella/usted)	va
(nosotros/as)	vamos
(vosotros/as)	vais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	van

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	fui
(tú)	fuiste
(él/ella/usted)	fue
(nosotros/as)	fuimos
(vosotros/as)	fuisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	fueron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	iré
(tú)	irás
(él/ella/usted)	irá
(nosotros/as)	iremos
(vosotros/as)	iréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	irán

**IMPERATIVE**

ve / id

**GERUND**

yendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

¿**Vamos** a comer al campo? Shall we have a picnic in the country?  
 El domingo **iré** a Edimburgo. I'll go to Edinburgh on Sunday.  
 Yo **no voy** con ellos. I'm not going with them.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ **jugar** (to play)**PRESENT**

(yo)	juego
(tú)	juegas
(él/ella/usted)	juega
(nosotros/as)	jugamos
(vosotros/as)	jugáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	juegan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	jugué
(tú)	jugaste
(él/ella/usted)	jugó
(nosotros/as)	jugamos
(vosotros/as)	jugasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	jugaron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	jugaré
(tú)	jugarás
(él/ella/usted)	jugará
(nosotros/as)	jugaremos
(vosotros/as)	jugaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	jugarán

**IMPERATIVE**

juega / jugad

**GERUND**

jugando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

**Juego** al fútbol todos los domingos. I play football every Sunday.  
**Están jugando** en el jardín. They're playing in the garden.  
**Jugarán** contra el Real Madrid. They'll play Real Madrid.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	vaya
(tú)	vayas
(él/ella/usted)	vaya
(nosotros/as)	vayamos
(vosotros/as)	vayáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vayan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	iba
(tú)	ibas
(él/ella/usted)	iba
(nosotros/as)	íbamos
(vosotros/as)	ibais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	iban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	iría
(tú)	irías
(él/ella/usted)	iría
(nosotros/as)	iríamos
(vosotros/as)	iríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	irían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

ido

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	juegue
(tú)	juegues
(él/ella/usted)	juegue
(nosotros/as)	juguemos
(vosotros/as)	juguéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	jueguen

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	jugaba
(tú)	jugabas
(él/ella/usted)	jugaba
(nosotros/as)	jugábamos
(vosotros/as)	jugabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	jugaban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	jugaría
(tú)	jugarías
(él/ella/usted)	jugaría
(nosotros/as)	jugaríamos
(vosotros/as)	jugaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	jugarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

jugado



## ▶ leer (to read)

## PRESENT

(yo)	leo
(tú)	lees
(él/ella/usted)	lee
(nosotros/as)	leemos
(vosotros/as)	leéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	leen

## PRETERITE

(yo)	leí
(tú)	leíste
(él/ella/usted)	leyó
(nosotros/as)	leímos
(vosotros/as)	leísteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	leyeron

## FUTURE

(yo)	leeré
(tú)	leerás
(él/ella/usted)	leerá
(nosotros/as)	leeremos
(vosotros/as)	leeréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	leerán

## IMPERATIVE

lee / leed

## GERUND

leyendo

## EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Hace mucho tiempo que no leo.* I haven't read anything for ages.*¿Has leído esta novela?* Have you read this novel?*Lo leí hace tiempo.* I read it a while ago.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

## ▶ lucir (to shine)

## PRESENT

(yo)	luzco
(tú)	luces
(él/ella/usted)	luce
(nosotros/as)	lucimos
(vosotros/as)	lucís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	lucen

## PRETERITE

(yo)	lucí
(tú)	luciste
(él/ella/usted)	lució
(nosotros/as)	lucimos
(vosotros/as)	lucisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	lucieron

## FUTURE

(yo)	luciré
(tú)	lucirás
(él/ella/usted)	lucirá
(nosotros/as)	luciremos
(vosotros/as)	luciréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	lucirán

## IMPERATIVE

luce / lucid

## GERUND

luciendo

## EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Lucirá un traje muy elegante.* She will be wearing a very smart dress.*Se lució en el examen.* He excelled in the exam.*Lucían las estrellas.* The stars were shining.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

## PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	lea
(tú)	leas
(él/ella/usted)	lea
(nosotros/as)	leamos
(vosotros/as)	leáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	lean

## IMPERFECT

(yo)	leía
(tú)	leías
(él/ella/usted)	leía
(nosotros/as)	leíamos
(vosotros/as)	leíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	leían

## CONDITIONAL

(yo)	leería
(tú)	leerías
(él/ella/usted)	leería
(nosotros/as)	leeríamos
(vosotros/as)	leeríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	leerían

## PAST PARTICIPLE

leído

## PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	luzca
(tú)	luzcas
(él/ella/usted)	luzca
(nosotros/as)	luzcamos
(vosotros/as)	luzcáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	luzcan

## IMPERFECT

(yo)	lucía
(tú)	lucías
(él/ella/usted)	lucía
(nosotros/as)	lucíamos
(vosotros/as)	lucíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	lucían

## CONDITIONAL

(yo)	luciría
(tú)	lucirías
(él/ella/usted)	luciría
(nosotros/as)	luciríamos
(vosotros/as)	luciríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	lucirían

## PAST PARTICIPLE

lucido



► **llover** (to rain)**PRESENT**

llueve

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

llueva

**PRETERITE**

llovió

**IMPERFECT**

llovía

**FUTURE**

lloverá

**CONDITIONAL**

llovería

**IMPERATIVE**

not used

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

llovido

**GERUND**

lloviendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Está lloviendo.* It's raining.*Llovió sin parar.* It rained non-stop.*Hace semanas que no llueve.* It hasn't rained for weeks.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **morir** (to die)**PRESENT**(yo) muero  
(tú) mueres  
(él/ella/usted) muere  
(nosotros/as) morimos  
(vosotros/as) morís  
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) mueren**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**(yo) muera  
(tú) mueras  
(él/ella/usted) muera  
(nosotros/as) muramos  
(vosotros/as) muráis  
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) mueran**PRETERITE**(yo) morí  
(tú) moriste  
(él/ella/usted) murió  
(nosotros/as) morimos  
(vosotros/as) moristeis  
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) murieron**IMPERFECT**(yo) moría  
(tú) morías  
(él/ella/usted) moría  
(nosotros/as) moríamos  
(vosotros/as) moríais  
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) morían**FUTURE**(yo) moriré  
(tú) morirás  
(él/ella/usted) morirá  
(nosotros/as) moriremos  
(vosotros/as) moriréis  
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) morirán**CONDITIONAL**(yo) moriría  
(tú) morirías  
(él/ella/usted) moriría  
(nosotros/as) moriríamos  
(vosotros/as) moriríais  
(ellos/ellas/ustedes) morirían**IMPERATIVE**

muere / morid

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

muerto

**GERUND**

muriendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Murió a las cinco de la madrugada.* He died at five in the morning.*Cuando me muera...* When I die...*Se le ha muerto el gato.* His cat has died.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



► **mover** (to move)**PRESENT**

(yo)	muevo
(tú)	mueves
(él/ella/usted)	mueve
(nosotros/as)	movemos
(vosotros/as)	movéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	mueven

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	moví
(tú)	moviste
(él/ella/usted)	movió
(nosotros/as)	movimos
(vosotros/as)	movisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	movieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	moveré
(tú)	moverás
(él/ella/usted)	moverá
(nosotros/as)	moveremos
(vosotros/as)	moveréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	moverán

**IMPERATIVE**

mueve / moved

**GERUND**

moviendo

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	mueva
(tú)	muevas
(él/ella/usted)	mueva
(nosotros/as)	movamos
(vosotros/as)	mováis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	muevan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	movía
(tú)	movías
(él/ella/usted)	movía
(nosotros/as)	movíamos
(vosotros/as)	movíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	movían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	movería
(tú)	moverías
(él/ella/usted)	movería
(nosotros/as)	moveríamos
(vosotros/as)	moveríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	moverían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

movido

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Mueve la mesa hacia la derecha.* Move the table over to the right.*Se está moviendo.* It's moving.*No se movieron de casa.* They didn't leave the house.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **nacer** (to be born)**PRESENT**

(yo)	nazco
(tú)	naces
(él/ella/usted)	nace
(nosotros/as)	nacemos
(vosotros/as)	nacéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	nacen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	ací
(tú)	naciste
(él/ella/usted)	nació
(nosotros/as)	nacimos
(vosotros/as)	nacisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	nacieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	naceré
(tú)	nacerás
(él/ella/usted)	nacerá
(nosotros/as)	naceremos
(vosotros/as)	naceréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	nacerán

**IMPERATIVE**

nace / naced

**GERUND**

naciendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Nació en 1967.* He was born in 1967.*Nacerá el año que viene.* It will be born next year.*¿Cuándo naciste?* When were you born?

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	nazca
(tú)	nazcas
(él/ella/usted)	nazca
(nosotros/as)	nazcamos
(vosotros/as)	nazcáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	nazcan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	nacía
(tú)	nacías
(él/ella/usted)	nacía
(nosotros/as)	nacíamos
(vosotros/as)	nacíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	nacían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	nacería
(tú)	nacerías
(él/ella/usted)	nacería
(nosotros/as)	naceríamos
(vosotros/as)	naceríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	nacerían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

nacido

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



► **negar** (to deny)**PRESENT**

(yo)	niego
(tú)	niegas
(él/ella/usted)	niega
(nosotros/as)	negamos
(vosotros/as)	negáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	niegan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	negué
(tú)	negaste
(él/ella/usted)	negó
(nosotros/as)	negamos
(vosotros/as)	negasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	negaron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	negaré
(tú)	negarás
(él/ella/usted)	negará
(nosotros/as)	negaremos
(vosotros/as)	negaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	negarán

**IMPERATIVE**

niega / negad

**GERUND**

negando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***No lo niegues.* Don't deny it.*Se negó a venir con nosotros.* She refused to come with us.*No me negarás que es barato.* You can't say it's not cheap.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**► **oír** (to hear)**PRESENT**

(yo)	oigo
(tú)	oyes
(él/ella/usted)	oye
(nosotros/as)	oímos
(vosotros/as)	oís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	oyen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	oí
(tú)	oíste
(él/ella/usted)	oyó
(nosotros/as)	oímos
(vosotros/as)	oísteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	oyeron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	oiré
(tú)	oirás
(él/ella/usted)	oirá
(nosotros/as)	oiremos
(vosotros/as)	oiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	oirán

**IMPERATIVE**

oye / oíd

**GERUND**

oyendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***No oigo nada.* I can't hear anything.*Si no oyes bien, ve al médico.* If you can't hear properly, go and see the doctor.*¿Has oído eso?* Did you hear that?**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.****PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	niegue
(tú)	niegues
(él/ella/usted)	niegue
(nosotros/as)	neguemos
(vosotros/as)	neguéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	nieguen

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	negaba
(tú)	negabas
(él/ella/usted)	negaba
(nosotros/as)	negábamos
(vosotros/as)	negabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	negaban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	negaría
(tú)	negarías
(él/ella/usted)	negaría
(nosotros/as)	negaríamos
(vosotros/as)	negaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	negarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

negado

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	oiga
(tú)	oigas
(él/ella/usted)	oiga
(nosotros/as)	oigamos
(vosotros/as)	oigáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	oigan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	oía
(tú)	oías
(él/ella/usted)	oía
(nosotros/as)	oíamos
(vosotros/as)	oíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	oían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	oiría
(tú)	oirías
(él/ella/usted)	oiría
(nosotros/as)	oiríamos
(vosotros/as)	oiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	oirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

oído

**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**



▶ **oler** (to smell)**PRESENT**

(yo)	huelo
(tú)	hueles
(él/ella/usted)	huele
(nosotros/as)	olemos
(vosotros/as)	oléis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	huelen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	olí
(tú)	oliste
(él/ella/usted)	olió
(nosotros/as)	olimos
(vosotros/as)	olisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	olieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	oleré
(tú)	olerás
(él/ella/usted)	olerá
(nosotros/as)	oleremos
(vosotros/as)	oleréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	olerán

**IMPERATIVE**

huele / oled

**GERUND**

oliendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Huele a pescado.* It smells of fish.*Olía muy bien.* It smelled really nice.*Con esto ya no olerá.* This will take the smell away.**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	huela
(tú)	huelas
(él/ella/usted)	huela
(nosotros/as)	olamos
(vosotros/as)	oláis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	huelan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	olía
(tú)	olías
(él/ella/usted)	olía
(nosotros/as)	olíamos
(vosotros/as)	olíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	olían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	olería
(tú)	olerías
(él/ella/usted)	olería
(nosotros/as)	oleríamos
(vosotros/as)	oleríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	olerían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

olido

▶ **pagar** (to pay)**PRESENT**

(yo)	pago
(tú)	pagas
(él/ella/usted)	paga
(nosotros/as)	pagamos
(vosotros/as)	pagáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pagan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	pagué
(tú)	pagaste
(él/ella/usted)	pagó
(nosotros/as)	pagamos
(vosotros/as)	pagasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pagaron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	pagaré
(tú)	pagarás
(él/ella/usted)	pagará
(nosotros/as)	pagaremos
(vosotros/as)	pagaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pagarán

**IMPERATIVE**

paga / pagad

**GERUND**

pagando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***¿Cuánto te pagan al mes?* How much do they pay you a month?*Lo pagué en efectivo.* I paid for it in cash.*Yo te pagaré la entrada.* I'll pay for your ticket.**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	pague
(tú)	pagues
(él/ella/usted)	pague
(nosotros/as)	paguemos
(vosotros/as)	paguéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	paguen

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	pagaba
(tú)	pagabas
(él/ella/usted)	pagaba
(nosotros/as)	pagábamos
(vosotros/as)	pagabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pagaban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	pagaría
(tú)	pagarías
(él/ella/usted)	pagaría
(nosotros/as)	pagaríamos
(vosotros/as)	pagaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pagarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

pagado



► **pedir** (to ask for)**PRESENT**

(yo)	pido
(tú)	pides
(él/ella/usted)	pide
(nosotros/as)	pedimos
(vosotros/as)	pedís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	piden

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	pedí
(tú)	pediste
(él/ella/usted)	pidió
(nosotros/as)	pedimos
(vosotros/as)	pedisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pidieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	pediré
(tú)	pedirás
(él/ella/usted)	pedirá
(nosotros/as)	pediremos
(vosotros/as)	pediréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pedirán

**IMPERATIVE**

pide / pedid

**GERUND**

pidiendo

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	pida
(tú)	pidas
(él/ella/usted)	pida
(nosotros/as)	pidamos
(vosotros/as)	pidáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pidan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	pedía
(tú)	pedías
(él/ella/usted)	pedía
(nosotros/as)	pedíamos
(vosotros/as)	pedíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pedían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	pediría
(tú)	pedirías
(él/ella/usted)	pediría
(nosotros/as)	pediríamos
(vosotros/as)	pediríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pedirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

pedido

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***No nos **pidieron** el pasaporte.* They didn't ask us for our passports.***Hemos pedido** dos cervezas.* We've ordered two beers.***Pídele** el teléfono.* Ask her for her telephone number.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**► **pensar** (to think)**PRESENT**

(yo)	pienso
(tú)	piensas
(él/ella/usted)	piensa
(nosotros/as)	pensamos
(vosotros/as)	pensáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	piensan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	pensé
(tú)	pensaste
(él/ella/usted)	pensó
(nosotros/as)	pensamos
(vosotros/as)	pensasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pensaron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	pensaré
(tú)	pensarás
(él/ella/usted)	pensará
(nosotros/as)	pensaremos
(vosotros/as)	pensaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pensarán

**IMPERATIVE**

piensa / pensad

**GERUND**

pensando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***No lo **pienses** más.* Don't think any more about it.***Está pensando** en comprarse un piso.* He's thinking of buying a flat.***Pensaba** que vendrías.* I thought you'd come.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.****PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	piense
(tú)	pienses
(él/ella/usted)	piense
(nosotros/as)	pensemos
(vosotros/as)	penséis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	piensen

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	pensaba
(tú)	pensabas
(él/ella/usted)	pensaba
(nosotros/as)	pensábamos
(vosotros/as)	pensabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pensaban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	pensaría
(tú)	pensarías
(él/ella/usted)	pensaría
(nosotros/as)	pensaríamos
(vosotros/as)	pensaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pensarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

pensado



▶ **poder** (to be able)**PRESENT**

(yo)	puedo
(tú)	puedes
(él/ella/usted)	puede
(nosotros/as)	podemos
(vosotros/as)	podéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pueden

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	pude
(tú)	podiste
(él/ella/usted)	pudo
(nosotros/as)	podimos
(vosotros/as)	podisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	podieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	podré
(tú)	podrás
(él/ella/usted)	podrá
(nosotros/as)	podremos
(vosotros/as)	podréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	podrán

**IMPERATIVE**

puede / poded

**GERUND**

pudiendo

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	pueda
(tú)	puedas
(él/ella/usted)	pueda
(nosotros/as)	podamos
(vosotros/as)	podáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	puedan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	podía
(tú)	podías
(él/ella/usted)	podía
(nosotros/as)	podíamos
(vosotros/as)	podíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	podían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	podría
(tú)	podrías
(él/ella/usted)	podría
(nosotros/as)	podríamos
(vosotros/as)	podríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	podrían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

podido

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***¿Puedo entrar?* Can I come in?*Puedes venir cuando quieras.* You can come when you like.*¿Podrías ayudarme?* Could you help me?**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**▶ **poner** (to put)**PRESENT**

(yo)	pongo
(tú)	pones
(él/ella/usted)	pone
(nosotros/as)	ponemos
(vosotros/as)	ponéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	ponen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	puse
(tú)	pusiste
(él/ella/usted)	puso
(nosotros/as)	pusimos
(vosotros/as)	pusisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pusieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	pondré
(tú)	pondrás
(él/ella/usted)	pondrá
(nosotros/as)	pondremos
(vosotros/as)	pondréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pondrán

**IMPERATIVE**

pon / poned

**GERUND**

poniendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Ponlo ahí encima.* Put it on there.*Lo pondré aquí.* I'll put it here.*Todos nos pusimos de acuerdo.* We all agreed.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.****PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	ponga
(tú)	pongas
(él/ella/usted)	ponga
(nosotros/as)	pongamos
(vosotros/as)	pongáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pongan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	ponía
(tú)	ponías
(él/ella/usted)	ponía
(nosotros/as)	poníamos
(vosotros/as)	poníais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	ponían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	pondría
(tú)	pondrías
(él/ella/usted)	pondría
(nosotros/as)	pondríamos
(vosotros/as)	pondríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	pondrían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

puesto

**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**



► **prohibir** (to forbid)**PRESENT**

(yo)	prohíbo
(tú)	prohíbes
(él/ella/usted)	prohíbe
(nosotros/as)	prohibimos
(vosotros/as)	prohibís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	prohíben

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	prohíba
(tú)	prohíbas
(él/ella/usted)	prohíba
(nosotros/as)	prohibamos
(vosotros/as)	prohibáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	prohíban

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	prohibí
(tú)	prohibiste
(él/ella/usted)	prohibió
(nosotros/as)	prohibimos
(vosotros/as)	prohibisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	prohibieron

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	prohibía
(tú)	prohibías
(él/ella/usted)	prohibía
(nosotros/as)	prohibíamos
(vosotros/as)	prohibíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	prohibían

**FUTURE**

(yo)	prohibiré
(tú)	prohibirás
(él/ella/usted)	prohibirá
(nosotros/as)	prohibiremos
(vosotros/as)	prohibiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	prohibirán

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	prohibiría
(tú)	prohibirías
(él/ella/usted)	prohibiría
(nosotros/as)	prohibiríamos
(vosotros/as)	prohibiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	prohibirían

**IMPERATIVE**

prohíbe / prohibid

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

prohibido

**GERUND**

prohibiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

Le **prohibieron** la entrada en el bingo. She was not allowed into the bingo hall.

**Han prohibido** el acceso a la prensa. The press have been banned.

Te **prohíbo** que me hables así. I won't have you talking to me like that!

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **querer** (to want)**PRESENT**

(yo)	quiero
(tú)	quieres
(él/ella/usted)	quiere
(nosotros/as)	queremos
(vosotros/as)	queréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	quieren

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	quiera
(tú)	quieras
(él/ella/usted)	quiera
(nosotros/as)	queramos
(vosotros/as)	queráis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	quieran

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	quise
(tú)	quisiste
(él/ella/usted)	quiso
(nosotros/as)	quisimos
(vosotros/as)	quisisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	quisieron

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	quería
(tú)	querías
(él/ella/usted)	quería
(nosotros/as)	queríamos
(vosotros/as)	queríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	querían

**FUTURE**

(yo)	querré
(tú)	querrás
(él/ella/usted)	querrá
(nosotros/as)	querremos
(vosotros/as)	querréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	querrán

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	querría
(tú)	querrías
(él/ella/usted)	querría
(nosotros/as)	querríamos
(vosotros/as)	querríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	querrían

**IMPERATIVE**

quiere / quered

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

querido

**GERUND**

queriendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

Te **quiero**. I love you.

**Quisiera** preguntar una cosa. I'd like to ask something.

No **quería** decírmelo. She didn't want to tell me.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



► **rehusar** (to refuse)**PRESENT**

(yo)	rehúso
(tú)	rehúsas
(él/ella/usted)	rehúsa
(nosotros/as)	rehusamos
(vosotros/as)	rehusáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rehúsan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	rehusé
(tú)	rehusaste
(él/ella/usted)	rehusó
(nosotros/as)	rehusamos
(vosotros/as)	rehusasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rehusaron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	rehusaré
(tú)	rehusarás
(él/ella/usted)	rehusará
(nosotros/as)	rehusaremos
(vosotros/as)	rehusaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rehusarán

**IMPERATIVE**

rehúsa / rehusad

**GERUND**

rehusando

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	rehúse
(tú)	rehúses
(él/ella/usted)	rehúse
(nosotros/as)	rehusemos
(vosotros/as)	rehuséis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rehúsen

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	rehusaba
(tú)	rehusabas
(él/ella/usted)	rehusaba
(nosotros/as)	rehusábamos
(vosotros/as)	rehusabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rehusaban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	rehusaría
(tú)	rehusarías
(él/ella/usted)	rehusaría
(nosotros/as)	rehusaríamos
(vosotros/as)	rehusaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rehusarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

rehusado

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Rehusó hacer declaraciones.* He declined to make a statement.*Ha rehusado el premio.* He's turned down the award.*Le rehusaron la posibilidad de reclamar.* They denied her the possibility of appealing.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**► **reír** (to laugh)**PRESENT**

(yo)	río
(tú)	ríes
(él/ella/usted)	ríe
(nosotros/as)	reímos
(vosotros/as)	reís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	ríen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	reí
(tú)	reíste
(él/ella/usted)	rió
(nosotros/as)	reímos
(vosotros/as)	reísteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	reiré
(tú)	reirás
(él/ella/usted)	reirá
(nosotros/as)	reiremos
(vosotros/as)	reiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reirán

**IMPERATIVE**

ríe / reíd

**GERUND**

riendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***No te rías de mí.* Don't laugh at me.*Si ríes mucho te saldrán arrugas.* If you laugh too much you'll get lines.*Se ríe de cualquier cosa.* She laughs at anything.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.****PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	ría
(tú)	rias
(él/ella/usted)	ría
(nosotros/as)	riamos
(vosotros/as)	riáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rían

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	reía
(tú)	reías
(él/ella/usted)	reía
(nosotros/as)	reíamos
(vosotros/as)	reíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	reiría
(tú)	reirías
(él/ella/usted)	reiría
(nosotros/as)	reiríamos
(vosotros/as)	reiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

reído

**GERUND**

riendo



► **reñir** (to scold)**PRESENT**

(yo)	riño
(tú)	riñes
(él/ella/usted)	riñe
(nosotros/as)	reñimos
(vosotros/as)	reñís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	riñen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	reñí
(tú)	reñiste
(él/ella/usted)	riñó
(nosotros/as)	reñimos
(vosotros/as)	reñisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	riñeron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	reñiré
(tú)	reñirás
(él/ella/usted)	reñirá
(nosotros/as)	reñiremos
(vosotros/as)	reñiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reñirán

**IMPERATIVE**

riñe / reñid

**GERUND**

riñendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

Les **riñó** por llegar tarde a casa. She told them off for getting home late.  
 Nos **reñía** sin motivo. She used to tell us off for no reason.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **resolver** (to solve)**PRESENT**

(yo)	resuelvo
(tú)	resuelves
(él/ella/usted)	resuelve
(nosotros/as)	resolvemos
(vosotros/as)	resolvéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	resuelven

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	resolví
(tú)	resolviste
(él/ella/usted)	resolvió
(nosotros/as)	resolvimos
(vosotros/as)	resolvisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	resolvieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	resolveré
(tú)	resolverás
(él/ella/usted)	resolverá
(nosotros/as)	resolveremos
(vosotros/as)	resolveréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	resolverán

**IMPERATIVE**

resuelve / resuelto

**GERUND**

resolviendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

**Resolvimos** el problema entre todos. We solved the problem together.  
 No hemos **resuelto** los problemas. We haven't solved the problems.  
 Hasta que no lo **resuelva** no descansaré. I won't rest until I've sorted it out.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	riña
(tú)	riñas
(él/ella/usted)	riña
(nosotros/as)	riñamos
(vosotros/as)	riñáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	riñan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	reñía
(tú)	reñías
(él/ella/usted)	reñía
(nosotros/as)	reñíamos
(vosotros/as)	reñíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reñían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	reñiría
(tú)	reñirías
(él/ella/usted)	reñiría
(nosotros/as)	reñiríamos
(vosotros/as)	reñiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reñirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

reñido

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	resuelva
(tú)	resuevas
(él/ella/usted)	resuelva
(nosotros/as)	resolvamos
(vosotros/as)	resolváis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	resuelvan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	resolvía
(tú)	resolvías
(él/ella/usted)	resolvía
(nosotros/as)	resolvíamos
(vosotros/as)	resolvíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	resolvían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	resolvería
(tú)	resolverías
(él/ella/usted)	resolvería
(nosotros/as)	resolveríamos
(vosotros/as)	resolveríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	resolverían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

resuelto



## ► reunir (to put together, to gather)

### PRESENT

(yo)	reúno
(tú)	reúnes
(él/ella/usted)	reúne
(nosotros/as)	reunimos
(vosotros/as)	reunís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reúnen

### PRETERITE

(yo)	reuní
(tú)	reuniste
(él/ella/usted)	reunió
(nosotros/as)	reunimos
(vosotros/as)	reunisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reunieron

### FUTURE

(yo)	reuniré
(tú)	reunirás
(él/ella/usted)	reunirá
(nosotros/as)	reuniremos
(vosotros/as)	reuniréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reunirán

### IMPERATIVE

reúne / reunid

### GERUND

reuniendo

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Han reunido suficientes pruebas.* They have gathered enough evidence.

*No reúne las condiciones necesarias.* He doesn't meet the necessary requirements.

*Se reunían una vez por semana.* They used to meet once a week.

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	reúna
(tú)	reúnas
(él/ella/usted)	reúna
(nosotros/as)	reunamos
(vosotros/as)	reunáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reúnan

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	reunía
(tú)	reunías
(él/ella/usted)	reunía
(nosotros/as)	reuníamos
(vosotros/as)	reuníais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reunían

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	reuniría
(tú)	reunirías
(él/ella/usted)	reuniría
(nosotros/as)	reuniríamos
(vosotros/as)	reuniríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	reunirían

### PAST PARTICIPLE

reunido

## ► rogar (to beg)

### PRESENT

(yo)	ruego
(tú)	ruegas
(él/ella/usted)	ruega
(nosotros/as)	rogamos
(vosotros/as)	rogáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rogan

### PRETERITE

(yo)	rogué
(tú)	rogaste
(él/ella/usted)	rogó
(nosotros/as)	rogamos
(vosotros/as)	rogasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rogaron

### FUTURE

(yo)	rogaré
(tú)	rogarás
(él/ella/usted)	rogará
(nosotros/as)	rogaremos
(vosotros/as)	rogaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rogarán

### IMPERATIVE

roga / rogado

### GERUND

rogando

### EXAMPLE PHRASES

*Te ruego que me lo devuelvas.* Please give it back to me.

*"Se ruega no fumar"* "Please do not smoke"

*Les rogamos acepten nuestras disculpas.* Please accept our apologies.

### PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

(yo)	ruegue
(tú)	ruegues
(él/ella/usted)	ruegue
(nosotros/as)	roguemos
(vosotros/as)	roguéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rueguen

### IMPERFECT

(yo)	rogaba
(tú)	rogabas
(él/ella/usted)	rogaba
(nosotros/as)	rogábamos
(vosotros/as)	rogabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rogaban

### CONDITIONAL

(yo)	rogaría
(tú)	rogarías
(él/ella/usted)	rogaría
(nosotros/as)	rogaríamos
(vosotros/as)	rogaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rogarían

### PAST PARTICIPLE

rogado



► **romper** (to break)**PRESENT**

(yo)	rompo
(tú)	rompes
(él/ella/usted)	rompe
(nosotros/as)	rompemos
(vosotros/as)	rompéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rompen

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	rompa
(tú)	rompas
(él/ella/usted)	rompa
(nosotros/as)	rompamos
(vosotros/as)	rompáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rompan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	rompí
(tú)	rompiste
(él/ella/usted)	rompió
(nosotros/as)	rompimos
(vosotros/as)	rompisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rompieron

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	rompía
(tú)	rompías
(él/ella/usted)	rompía
(nosotros/as)	rompíamos
(vosotros/as)	rompíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	rompían

**FUTURE**

(yo)	romperé
(tú)	romperás
(él/ella/usted)	romperá
(nosotros/as)	romperemos
(vosotros/as)	romperéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	romperán

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	rompería
(tú)	romperías
(él/ella/usted)	rompería
(nosotros/as)	romperíamos
(vosotros/as)	romperíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	romperían

**IMPERATIVE**

rompe / romped

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

roto

**GERUND**

rompiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Siempre están rompiendo cosas.* They're always breaking things.*Cuidado, no lo rompas.* Careful you don't break it.*Se rompió el jarrón.* The vase broke.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**► **saber** (to know)**PRESENT**

(yo)	sé
(tú)	sabes
(él/ella/usted)	sabe
(nosotros/as)	sabemos
(vosotros/as)	sabéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	saben

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	sepa
(tú)	sepas
(él/ella/usted)	sepa
(nosotros/as)	sepamos
(vosotros/as)	sepáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sepan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	supe
(tú)	supiste
(él/ella/usted)	supo
(nosotros/as)	supimos
(vosotros/as)	supisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	supieron

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	sabía
(tú)	sabías
(él/ella/usted)	sabía
(nosotros/as)	sabíamos
(vosotros/as)	sabíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sabían

**FUTURE**

(yo)	sabré
(tú)	sabrás
(él/ella/usted)	sabrá
(nosotros/as)	sabremos
(vosotros/as)	sabréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sabrán

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	sabría
(tú)	sabrías
(él/ella/usted)	sabría
(nosotros/as)	sabríamos
(vosotros/as)	sabríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sabrían

**IMPERATIVE**

sabe / sabed

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

sabido

**GERUND**

sabiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***No lo sé.* I don't know.*¿Sabes una cosa?* Do you know what?*Pensaba que lo sabías.* I thought you knew.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**



▶ **sacar** (to take out)**PRESENT**

(yo)	saco
(tú)	sacas
(él/ella/usted)	saca
(nosotros/as)	sacamos
(vosotros/as)	sacáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sacan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	saqué
(tú)	sacaste
(él/ella/usted)	sacó
(nosotros/as)	sacamos
(vosotros/as)	sacasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sacaron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	sacaré
(tú)	sacarás
(él/ella/usted)	sacará
(nosotros/as)	sacaremos
(vosotros/as)	sacaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sacarán

**IMPERATIVE**

saca / sacad

**GERUND**

sacando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

Ya **he sacado** las entradas. I've already bought the tickets.

**Saqué** un 7 en el examen. I got 7 points in the exam.

No **saques** la cabeza por la ventanilla. Don't lean out of the window.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

▶ **salir** (to go out)**PRESENT**

(yo)	salgo
(tú)	sales
(él/ella/usted)	sale
(nosotros/as)	salimos
(vosotros/as)	salís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	salen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	salí
(tú)	saliste
(él/ella/usted)	salió
(nosotros/as)	salimos
(vosotros/as)	salisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	salieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	saldré
(tú)	saldrás
(él/ella/usted)	saldrá
(nosotros/as)	saldremos
(vosotros/as)	saldréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	saldrán

**IMPERATIVE**

sal / salid

**GERUND**

saliendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

Hace tiempo que **no salimos**. We haven't been out for a while.

Por favor, **salgan** por la puerta de atrás. Please leave via the back door.

**Salió** un par de veces con nosotros. He went out with us a couple of times.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	saque
(tú)	saques
(él/ella/usted)	saque
(nosotros/as)	saquemos
(vosotros/as)	saquéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	saquen

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	sacaba
(tú)	sacabas
(él/ella/usted)	sacaba
(nosotros/as)	sacábamos
(vosotros/as)	sacabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sacaban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	sacaría
(tú)	sacarías
(él/ella/usted)	sacaría
(nosotros/as)	sacaríamos
(vosotros/as)	sacaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sacarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

sacado

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	salga
(tú)	salgas
(él/ella/usted)	salga
(nosotros/as)	salgamos
(vosotros/as)	salgáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	salgan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	salía
(tú)	salías
(él/ella/usted)	salía
(nosotros/as)	salíamos
(vosotros/as)	salíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	salían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	saldría
(tú)	saldrías
(él/ella/usted)	saldría
(nosotros/as)	saldríamos
(vosotros/as)	saldríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	saldrían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

salido



► **satisfacer** (to satisfy)**PRESENT**

(yo)	satisfago
(tú)	satisfaces
(él/ella/usted)	satisface
(nosotros/as)	satisfacemos
(vosotros/as)	satisfacéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	satisfacen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	satisfice
(tú)	satisficiste
(él/ella/usted)	satisfizo
(nosotros/as)	satisficimos
(vosotros/as)	satisficisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	satisficieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	satisfaré
(tú)	satisfarás
(él/ella/usted)	satisfará
(nosotros/as)	satisfaremos
(vosotros/as)	satisfaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	satisfarán

**IMPERATIVE**

satisfaz / satisface /satisfied

**GERUND**

satisfaciendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

*No me **satisface** nada el resultado.* I'm not at all satisfied with the result.

*Eso **satisfizo** mi curiosidad.* That satisfied my curiosity.

***Ha** **satisfecho** mis expectativas.* It came up to my expectations.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	satisfaga
(tú)	satisfagas
(él/ella/usted)	satisfaga
(nosotros/as)	satisfagamos
(vosotros/as)	satisfagáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	satisfagan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	satisfacía
(tú)	satisfacías
(él/ella/usted)	satisfacía
(nosotros/as)	satisfacíamos
(vosotros/as)	satisfacíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	satisfacían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	satisfaría
(tú)	satisfarías
(él/ella/usted)	satisfaría
(nosotros/as)	satisfaríamos
(vosotros/as)	satisfaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	satisfarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

satisfecho

► **seguir** (to follow)**PRESENT**

(yo)	sigo
(tú)	sigues
(él/ella/usted)	sigue
(nosotros/as)	seguimos
(vosotros/as)	seguís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	siguen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	seguí
(tú)	seguiste
(él/ella/usted)	siguió
(nosotros/as)	seguimos
(vosotros/as)	seguisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	siguieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	seguiré
(tú)	seguirás
(él/ella/usted)	seguirá
(nosotros/as)	seguiremos
(vosotros/as)	seguiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	seguirán

**IMPERATIVE**

sigue / seguid

**GERUND**

siguiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

***Siga** por esta calle hasta el final.* Go on till you get to the end of the street.

***Nos seguiremos** viendo.* We will go on seeing each other.

***Nos siguió** todo el camino.* He followed us all the way.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	siga
(tú)	sigas
(él/ella/usted)	siga
(nosotros/as)	sigamos
(vosotros/as)	sigáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sigan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	seguía
(tú)	seguías
(él/ella/usted)	seguía
(nosotros/as)	seguíamos
(vosotros/as)	seguíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	seguían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	seguiría
(tú)	seguirías
(él/ella/usted)	seguiría
(nosotros/as)	seguiríamos
(vosotros/as)	seguiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	seguirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

seguido



► **sentir** (to feel)**PRESENT**

(yo)	siento
(tú)	sientes
(él/ella/usted)	siente
(nosotros/as)	sentimos
(vosotros/as)	sentís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sienten

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	sentí
(tú)	sentiste
(él/ella/usted)	sintió
(nosotros/as)	sentimos
(vosotros/as)	sentisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sintieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	sentiré
(tú)	sentirás
(él/ella/usted)	sentirá
(nosotros/as)	sentiremos
(vosotros/as)	sentiréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sentirán

**IMPERATIVE**

siente / sentid

**GERUND**

sintiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Siento mucho lo que pasó.* I'm really sorry about what happened.*Sentí un pinchazo en la pierna.* I felt a sharp pain in my leg.*No creo que lo sienta.* I don't think she's sorry.**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	sienta
(tú)	sientas
(él/ella/usted)	sienta
(nosotros/as)	sintamos
(vosotros/as)	sintáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sientan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	sentía
(tú)	sentías
(él/ella/usted)	sentía
(nosotros/as)	sentíamos
(vosotros/as)	sentíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sentían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	sentiría
(tú)	sentirías
(él/ella/usted)	sentiría
(nosotros/as)	sentiríamos
(vosotros/as)	sentiríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sentirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

sentido

**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**► **ser** (to be)**PRESENT**

(yo)	soy
(tú)	eres
(él/ella/usted)	es
(nosotros/as)	somos
(vosotros/as)	sois
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	son

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	fui
(tú)	fuiste
(él/ella/usted)	fue
(nosotros/as)	fuimos
(vosotros/as)	fuisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	fueron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	seré
(tú)	serás
(él/ella/usted)	será
(nosotros/as)	seremos
(vosotros/as)	seréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	serán

**IMPERATIVE**

sé / sed

**GERUND**

siendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Soy español.* I'm Spanish.*¿Fuiste tú el que llamó?* Was it you who phoned?*Era de noche.* It was dark.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.****PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	sea
(tú)	seas
(él/ella/usted)	sea
(nosotros/as)	seamos
(vosotros/as)	seáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	sean

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	era
(tú)	eras
(él/ella/usted)	era
(nosotros/as)	éramos
(vosotros/as)	erais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	eran

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	sería
(tú)	serías
(él/ella/usted)	sería
(nosotros/as)	seríamos
(vosotros/as)	seríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	serían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

sido



► **tener** (to have)**PRESENT**

(yo)	tengo
(tú)	tienes
(él/ella/usted)	tiene
(nosotros/as)	tenemos
(vosotros/as)	tenéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	tienen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	tuve
(tú)	tuviste
(él/ella/usted)	tuvo
(nosotros/as)	tuvimos
(vosotros/as)	tuvisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	tuvieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	tendré
(tú)	tendrás
(él/ella/usted)	tendrá
(nosotros/as)	tendremos
(vosotros/as)	tendréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	tendrán

**IMPERATIVE**

ten / tened

**GERUND**

teniendo

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	tenga
(tú)	tengas
(él/ella/usted)	tenga
(nosotros/as)	tengamos
(vosotros/as)	tengáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	tengan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	tenía
(tú)	tenías
(él/ella/usted)	tenía
(nosotros/as)	teníamos
(vosotros/as)	teníais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	tenían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	tendría
(tú)	tendrías
(él/ella/usted)	tendría
(nosotros/as)	tendríamos
(vosotros/as)	tendríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	tendrían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

tenido

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Tengo sed.* I'm thirsty.*No tenía suficiente dinero.* She didn't have enough money.*Tuvimos que irnos.* We had to leave.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **torcer** (to twist)**PRESENT**

(yo)	tuerzo
(tú)	tuerces
(él/ella/usted)	tuerce
(nosotros/as)	torcemos
(vosotros/as)	torcéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	tuercen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	torcí
(tú)	torciste
(él/ella/usted)	torció
(nosotros/as)	torcimos
(vosotros/as)	torcisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	torcieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	torceré
(tú)	torcerás
(él/ella/usted)	torcerá
(nosotros/as)	torceremos
(vosotros/as)	torceréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	torcerán

**IMPERATIVE**

tuerce / torced

**GERUND**

torciendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Se me torció el tobillo.* I twisted my ankle.*Tuerza a la izquierda.* Turn left.*Tuércelo un poco más.* Twist it a little more.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	tuerza
(tú)	tuerzas
(él/ella/usted)	tuerza
(nosotros/as)	torzamos
(vosotros/as)	torzáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	tuerzan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	torcía
(tú)	torcías
(él/ella/usted)	torcía
(nosotros/as)	torcíamos
(vosotros/as)	torcíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	torcían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	torcería
(tú)	torcerías
(él/ella/usted)	torcería
(nosotros/as)	torceríamos
(vosotros/as)	torceríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	torcerían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

torcido

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



► **traer** (to bring)**PRESENT**

(yo)	traigo
(tú)	traes
(él/ella/usted)	trae
(nosotros/as)	traemos
(vosotros/as)	traéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	traen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	traje
(tú)	trajiste
(él/ella/usted)	trajo
(nosotros/as)	trajimos
(vosotros/as)	trajisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	trajeron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	traeré
(tú)	traerás
(él/ella/usted)	traerá
(nosotros/as)	traeremos
(vosotros/as)	traeréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	traerán

**IMPERATIVE**

trae / traed

**GERUND**

trayendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**¿Has **traído** lo que te pedí? Have you brought what I asked?No **trajo** el dinero. He didn't bring the money.**Trae** eso. Give that here.**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	traiga
(tú)	traigas
(él/ella/usted)	traiga
(nosotros/as)	traigamos
(vosotros/as)	traigáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	traigan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	traía
(tú)	traías
(él/ella/usted)	traía
(nosotros/as)	traíamos
(vosotros/as)	traíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	traían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	traería
(tú)	traerías
(él/ella/usted)	traería
(nosotros/as)	traeríamos
(vosotros/as)	traeríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	traerían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

traído

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **valer** (to be worth)**PRESENT**

(yo)	valgo
(tú)	vales
(él/ella/usted)	vale
(nosotros/as)	valemos
(vosotros/as)	valéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	valen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	valí
(tú)	valiste
(él/ella/usted)	valió
(nosotros/as)	valimos
(vosotros/as)	valisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	valieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	valdré
(tú)	valdrás
(él/ella/usted)	valdrá
(nosotros/as)	valdremos
(vosotros/as)	valdréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	valdrán

**IMPERATIVE**

vale / valed

**GERUND**

valiendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**¿Cuánto **vale** eso? How much is that?No **valía** la pena. It wasn't worth it.**Valga** lo que **valga**, lo compro. I'll buy it, no matter how much it costs.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	valga
(tú)	valgas
(él/ella/usted)	valga
(nosotros/as)	valgamos
(vosotros/as)	valgáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	valgan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	valía
(tú)	valías
(él/ella/usted)	valía
(nosotros/as)	valíamos
(vosotros/as)	valíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	valían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	valdría
(tú)	valdrías
(él/ella/usted)	valdría
(nosotros/as)	valdríamos
(vosotros/as)	valdríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	valdrían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

valido

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



► **vencer** (to win)**PRESENT**

(yo)	venzo
(tú)	vences
(él/ella/usted)	vence
(nosotros/as)	vencemos
(vosotros/as)	vencéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vencen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	vencí
(tú)	venciste
(él/ella/usted)	venció
(nosotros/as)	vencimos
(vosotros/as)	vencisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vencieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	venceré
(tú)	vencerás
(él/ella/usted)	vencerá
(nosotros/as)	venceremos
(vosotros/as)	venceréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vencerán

**IMPERATIVE**

vence / venced

**GERUND**

venciendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

¿Quién crees que **vencerá** en las elecciones? Who do you think will win the elections?  
**Han vencido** tres veces fuera de casa. They've had three away wins.  
**Vencimos** por dos a uno. We won two-one.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **venir** (to come)**PRESENT**

(yo)	vengo
(tú)	vienes
(él/ella/usted)	viene
(nosotros/as)	venimos
(vosotros/as)	venís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vienen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	vine
(tú)	viniste
(él/ella/usted)	vino
(nosotros/as)	vinimos
(vosotros/as)	vinisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vinieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	vendré
(tú)	vendrás
(él/ella/usted)	vendrá
(nosotros/as)	vendremos
(vosotros/as)	vendréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vendrán

**IMPERATIVE**

ven / venid

**GERUND**

viniendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**

**Vengo** andando desde la playa. I've walked all the way from the beach.  
 ¿**Vendrás** conmigo al cine? Will you come to see a film with me?  
 Prefiero que no **venga**. I'd rather he didn't come.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	venza
(tú)	venzas
(él/ella/usted)	venza
(nosotros/as)	vencamos
(vosotros/as)	vencáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vencan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	vencía
(tú)	vencías
(él/ella/usted)	vencía
(nosotros/as)	venciáramos
(vosotros/as)	vencíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vencían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	vencería
(tú)	vencerías
(él/ella/usted)	vencería
(nosotros/as)	venceríamos
(vosotros/as)	venceríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vencerían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

vencido

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	venga
(tú)	vengas
(él/ella/usted)	venga
(nosotros/as)	vengamos
(vosotros/as)	vengáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vengan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	venía
(tú)	venías
(él/ella/usted)	venía
(nosotros/as)	veníamos
(vosotros/as)	veníais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	venían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	vendría
(tú)	vendrías
(él/ella/usted)	vendría
(nosotros/as)	vendríamos
(vosotros/as)	vendríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vendrían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

venido



► **ver** (to see)**PRESENT**

(yo)	veo
(tú)	ves
(él/ella/usted)	ve
(nosotros/as)	vemos
(vosotros/as)	veis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	ven

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	vi
(tú)	viste
(él/ella/usted)	vio
(nosotros/as)	vimos
(vosotros/as)	visteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	veré
(tú)	verás
(él/ella/usted)	verá
(nosotros/as)	veremos
(vosotros/as)	veréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	verán

**IMPERATIVE**

ve / ved

**GERUND**

viendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***No veo muy bien.* I can't see very well.*Los veía a todos desde la ventana.* I could see them all from the window.*¿Viste lo que pasó?* Did you see what happened?

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

► **vivir** (to live)**PRESENT**

(yo)	vivo
(tú)	vives
(él/ella/usted)	vive
(nosotros/as)	vivimos
(vosotros/as)	vivís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	viven

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	viví
(tú)	viviste
(él/ella/usted)	vivió
(nosotros/as)	vivimos
(vosotros/as)	vivisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vivieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	viviré
(tú)	vivirás
(él/ella/usted)	vivirá
(nosotros/as)	viviremos
(vosotros/as)	viviréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vivirán

**IMPERATIVE**

vive / vivid

**GERUND**

viviendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Vivo en Valencia.* I live in Valencia.*Vivieron juntos dos años.* They lived together for two years.*Hemos vivido momentos difíciles.* We've had some difficult times.

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	vea
(tú)	veas
(él/ella/usted)	vea
(nosotros/as)	veamos
(vosotros/as)	veáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vean

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	veía
(tú)	veías
(él/ella/usted)	veía
(nosotros/as)	veíamos
(vosotros/as)	veíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	veían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	vería
(tú)	verías
(él/ella/usted)	vería
(nosotros/as)	veríamos
(vosotros/as)	veríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	verían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

visto

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	viva
(tú)	vivas
(él/ella/usted)	viva
(nosotros/as)	vivamos
(vosotros/as)	viváis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vivan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	vivía
(tú)	vivías
(él/ella/usted)	vivía
(nosotros/as)	vivíamos
(vosotros/as)	vivíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vivían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	viviría
(tú)	vivirías
(él/ella/usted)	viviría
(nosotros/as)	viviríamos
(vosotros/as)	viviríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vivirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

vivido

Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.



▶ **volcar** (to overturn)**PRESENT**

(yo)	vuelco
(tú)	vuelcas
(él/ella/usted)	vuelca
(nosotros/as)	volcamos
(vosotros/as)	volcáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vuelcan

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	volqué
(tú)	volcaste
(él/ella/usted)	volcó
(nosotros/as)	volcamos
(vosotros/as)	volcasteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	volcaron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	volcaré
(tú)	volcarás
(él/ella/usted)	volcará
(nosotros/as)	volcaremos
(vosotros/as)	volcaréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	volcarán

**IMPERATIVE**

vuelca / volcad

**GERUND**

volcando

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***El camión volcó.* The lorry overturned.*Volcó la basura en el suelo.* He emptied the rubbish out on the floor.*Ten cuidado no lo vuelques.* Careful not to knock it over.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.**▶ **volver** (to return)**PRESENT**

(yo)	vuelvo
(tú)	vuelves
(él/ella/usted)	vuelve
(nosotros/as)	volvemos
(vosotros/as)	volvéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vuelven

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	volví
(tú)	volviste
(él/ella/usted)	volvió
(nosotros/as)	volvimos
(vosotros/as)	volvisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	volvieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	volveré
(tú)	volverás
(él/ella/usted)	volverá
(nosotros/as)	volveremos
(vosotros/as)	volveréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	volverán

**IMPERATIVE**

vuelve / volved

**GERUND**

volviendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES***Mi padre vuelve mañana.* My father's coming back tomorrow.*No vuelvas por aquí.* Don't come back here.*Ha vuelto a casa.* He's gone back home.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.****PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	vuelque
(tú)	vuelques
(él/ella/usted)	vuelque
(nosotros/as)	volquemos
(vosotros/as)	volquéis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vuelquen

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	volcaba
(tú)	volcabas
(él/ella/usted)	volcaba
(nosotros/as)	volcábamos
(vosotros/as)	volcabais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	volcaban

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	volcaría
(tú)	volcarías
(él/ella/usted)	volcaría
(nosotros/as)	volcaríamos
(vosotros/as)	volcaríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	volcarían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

volcado

**PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	vuelva
(tú)	vuelvas
(él/ella/usted)	vuelva
(nosotros/as)	volvamos
(vosotros/as)	volváis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	vuelvan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	volvía
(tú)	volvías
(él/ella/usted)	volvía
(nosotros/as)	volvíamos
(vosotros/as)	volvíais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	volvían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	volvería
(tú)	volverías
(él/ella/usted)	volvería
(nosotros/as)	volveríamos
(vosotros/as)	volveríais
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	volverían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

vuelto



► **zurcir** (to darn)**PRESENT**

(yo)	zurzo
(tú)	zurces
(él/ella/usted)	zurce
(nosotros/as)	zurcimos
(vosotros/as)	zurcís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	zurcen

**PRETERITE**

(yo)	zurcí
(tú)	zurciste
(él/ella/usted)	zurció
(nosotros/as)	zurcimos
(vosotros/as)	zurcisteis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	zurcieron

**FUTURE**

(yo)	zurciré
(tú)	zurcirás
(él/ella/usted)	zurcirá
(nosotros/as)	zurciremos
(vosotros/as)	zurciréis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	zurcirán

**IMPERATIVE**

zurce / zurcid

**GERUND**

zurciendo

**EXAMPLE PHRASES**¿Quién le **zurce** las camisas? Who darns his shirts?¡Que te **zurzan**! Get lost!Se pasa el día **zurciéndole** la ropa. She spends the whole day darning his clothes.**Remember that subject pronouns are not used very often in Spanish.****PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE**

(yo)	zurza
(tú)	zurzas
(él/ella/usted)	zurza
(nosotros/as)	zurzamos
(vosotros/as)	zurzáis
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	zurzan

**IMPERFECT**

(yo)	zurcía
(tú)	zurcías
(él/ella/usted)	zurcía
(nosotros/as)	zurcíamos
(vosotros/as)	zurcíaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	zurcían

**CONDITIONAL**

(yo)	zurciría
(tú)	zurcirías
(él/ella/usted)	zurciría
(nosotros/as)	zurciríamos
(vosotros/as)	zurciríaís
(ellos/ellas/ustedes)	zurcirían

**PAST PARTICIPLE**

zurcido

**How to use the Verb Index**

The verbs in bold are the model verbs which you will find in the verb tables. All the other verbs follow one of these patterns, so the number next to each verb indicates which pattern fits this particular verb. For example, **acampar** (to camp) follows the same pattern as **hablar** (number 39 in the verb tables).

All the verbs are in alphabetical order.

Superior numbers (<sup>1</sup> etc) refer you to notes on page 91. These notes explain any differences between verbs and their model.

abandonar	39	acudir	81	ahorrar	39	anotar	39
abastecer	20	acurrucarse	39	ajustar	39	anticipar	39
<b>abolir</b>	<b>2</b>	acusar	39	alabar	39	antojarse	39
abollar	39	adaptar	39	alardear	39	anular	39
abombar	39	adecuar	39	alargar	53	anunciar	39
abonar	39	adelantar	39	alcanzar	21	añadir	81
abortar	39	adelgazar	21	alegrar	39	apagar	53
abrasar	39	adivinar	39	alejar	39	apañar	39
abrazar	21	admirar	39	aliarse	31	aparcar	68
abrigar	53	admitir	81	aligerar	39	aparecer	20
<b>abrir</b>	<b>3</b>	adoptar	39	alimentar	39	aparentar	39
abrochar	39	adorar	39	aliviar	39	apartar	39
absorber	16	adornar	39	almacenar	39	apasionarse	39
abstenerse	74	<b>adquirir</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>almorzar</b>	<b>6</b>	apearse	39
abultar	39	advertir	72	alojar	39	apellidar	39
aburrir	81	afectar	39	alquilar	39	apestar	39
abusar	39	afeitar	39	alterar	39	apetecer	20
acabar	39	aficionar	39	alternar	39	aplastar	39
acampar	39	afilar	39	alucinar	39	aplaudir	81
acariciar	39	afiliarse	39	aludir	81	aplazar	21
acatarrarse	39	afinar	39	alzar	21	aplicar	68
acceder	16	afirmar	39	amamantar	39	apoderarse	39
acelerar	39	aflojar	39	amanecer <sup>1</sup>	20	aportar	39
acentuar	4	afrontar	39	amar	39	apostar	19
aceptar	39	agachar	39	amargar	53	apoyar	39
acercar	68	agarrar	39	amarrar	39	apreciar	39
acertar	55	agitar	39	amenazar	21	aprender	16
aclarar	39	aglomerarse	39	amontonar	39	apresurarse	39
acobardarse	39	agobiar	39	amortiguar	10	apretar	55
acoger	15	agotar	39	ampliar	31	aprobar	19
acompañar	39	agradar	39	amputar	39	aprovechar	39
aconsejar	39	agradecer	20	amueblar	39	aproximar	39
acordar	19	agrupar	39	analizar	21	apuntar	39
acostar	19	aguantar	39	<b>andar</b>	<b>7</b>	apuñalar	39
acostumbrar	39	ahogar	53	animar	39	apurar	39
actuar	4	ahorcar	68	anochece <sup>1</sup>	20	arañar	39



arar	39	averiarse	31	castigar	53
archivar	39	<b>averiguar</b>	<b>10</b>	causar	39
arder	16	avisar	39	cavar	39
armar	39	ayudar	39	cazar	21
arrancar	68	azotar	39	ceder	16
arrasar	39	bailar	39	celebrar	39
arrastrar	39	bajar	39	cenar	39
arrebatar	39	bañar	39	cepillar	39
arreglar	39	barnizar	21	cerrar	55
arrepentirse	72	barrer	16	chapotear	39
arrestar	39	basar	39	charlar	39
arriesgar	53	bastar	39	chillar	39
arrimar	39	batir	81	chirriar	31
arrodillarse	39	beber	16	chocar	68
arrojar	39	<b>bendecir</b>	<b>11</b>	chupar	39
arropar	39	beneficiar	39	circular	39
arrugar	53	besar	39	citar	39
arruinar	39	bloquear	39	clasificar	68
asaltar	39	bombardear	39	clavar	39
asar	39	bordar	39	cobrar	39
ascender	30	borrar	39	<b>cocer</b>	<b>14</b>
asegurar	39	bostezar	21	cocinar	39
asesinar	39	botar	39	<b>coger</b>	<b>15</b>
asfixiar	39	brillar	39	coincidir	81
asimilar	39	brincar	68	cojear	39
asistir	81	brindar	39	colaborar	39
asociar	39	bromear	39	colar	19
asolear	39	brotar	39	coleccionar	39
asomar	39	bucear	39	colgar	65
asombrar	39	burlar	39	colocar	68
asumir	81	buscar	68	colonizar	21
asustar	39	<b>caber</b>	<b>12</b>	combinar	39
atacar	68	caducar	68	comentar	39
atar	39	<b>caer</b>	<b>13</b>	comenzar	29
atardecer <sup>1</sup>	20	calar	39	<b>comer</b>	<b>16</b>
atender	30	calcar	68	compadecer	20
aterrizar	21	calcular	39	comparar	39
atiborrar	39	calentar	55	compartir	81
atracar	68	calificar	68	compensar	39
atraer	76	callar	39	competir	54
atrapar	39	calmar	39	complacer	49
atravesar	55	cambiar	39	completar	39
atreverse	16	caminar	39	complicar	68
atropellar	39	cancelar	39	componer	57
aumentar	39	cansar	39	comportarse	39
<b>aunar</b>	<b>8</b>	cantar	39	comprar	39
autorizar	21	capacitar	39	comprender	16
avanzar	21	capturar	39	comprobar	19
aventajar	39	cargar	53	comprometer	16
aventar	55	casar	39	comunicar	68
<b>avergonzar</b>	<b>9</b>	cascar	6	concebir	54

coser	16	desanimar	39	desprender	16
costar	19	desaparecer	20	despreocuparse	39
crear	39	desaprovechar	39	destacar	68
<b>crecer</b>	<b>20</b>	desarrollar	39	destapar	39
crear	44	desatar	39	desteñir	62
criar	31	desayunar	39	destinar	39
criticar	68	decalzar	21	destornillar	39
crujir	81	descansar	39	destronar	21
<b>cruzar</b>	<b>21</b>	descargar	53	destruir	18
cuadrar	39	descender	30	desvelar	39
cuajar	39	descolgar	65	desviar	31
<b>cubrir</b>	<b>22</b>	desconcertar	55	detener	74
cuchichear	39	desconectar	39	deteriorar	39
cuidar	39	desconfiar	31	determinar	39
cultivar	39	descontar	19	detestar	39
cumplir	81	descoser	16	develar	83
curar	39	describir	34	devorar	39
dañar	39	descubrir	22	dibujar	39
<b>dar</b>	<b>23</b>	descuidar	39	diferenciar	39
debatir	81	desdoblar	39	dificultar	39
deber	16	desear	39	digerir	72
debilitar	39	desembarcar	68	diluir	18
decepcionar	39	desembocar	68	dimitir	81
decidir	81	desempeñar	39	<b>dirigir</b>	<b>25</b>
<b>decir</b>	<b>24</b>	desengañar	39	disculpar	39
declarar	39	desenredar	39	discutir	81
decorar	39	desenvolver	83	diseñar	39
dedicar	68	deseperar	39	disfrazar	21
deducir	17	desfilas	39	disfrutar	39
defender	30	desgastar	39	disgustar	39
definir	81	deshacer	40	disimular	39
deformar	39	deshinchar	39	disminuir	18
defraudar	39	desilusionar	39	disolver	63
dejar	39	desinfectar	39	disparar	39
delatar	39	desinflar	39	disponer	57
deletrear	39	deslizarse	21	disputar	39
demostrar	19	deslumbrar	39	<b>distinguir</b>	<b>26</b>
denunciar	39	desmayar	39	distraer	76
depender	16	desmontar	39	distribuir	18
deprimir	81	desnudar	39	disuadir	81
derramar	39	desobedecer	20	divertir	72
derretir	54	desorientar	39	dividir	81
derribar	39	despachar	39	divorciarse	39
derrotar	39	despedir	54	divulgar	53
derrumbar	39	despegar	53	doblar	39
desabrochar	39	despejar	39	doler	48
desacertar	55	despergarse	21	dominar	39
desafiar	31	despertar	55	<b>dormir</b>	<b>27</b>
desafinar	39	despistar	39	drogar	53
desahogar	53	desplegar	50	ducharse	39
desalojar	39	despreciar	39	durar	39
				echar	39
				editar	39
				educar	68
				efectuar	4
				ejectuar	39
				ejercer	78
				elaborar	39
				<b>elegir</b>	<b>28</b>
				elegir	39
				eliminar	39
				elogiar	39
				embalar	39
				embarcar	68
				emborrachar	39
				embrollar	39
				emigrar	39
				emitir	81
				emocionar	39
				empalmar	39
				empañar	39
				empapar	39
				empapelar	39
				empaquetar	39
				empastar	39
				empatar	39
				empeñar	39
				empeorar	39
				<b>empezar</b>	<b>29</b>
				emplear	39
				empujar	39
				enamorar	39
				encabezar	21
				encajar	39
				encantar	39
				encarcelar	39
				encargar	53
				encender	30
				encerrar	55
				encoger	15
				encontrar	19
				enchufar	39
				enderezar	21
				endulzar	21
				endurecer	20
				enemistar	39
				enfadar	39
				enfermar	39
				enfocar	68
				enfrentar	39
				enfriar	31
				enganchar	39



engañar	39	espabilar	39	extraviar	31
engordar	39	esperar	39	fabricar	68
enlazar	21	espiar	31	facilitar	39
enloquecer	20	espirar	39	facturar	39
enmascarar	39	esquiar	31	fallar	39
enojar	39	esquivar	39	fallecer	20
enorgullecerse	20	establecer	20	falsificar	68
enredar	39	estacionar	39	faltar	39
enriquecer	20	estafar	39	fastidiar	39
enrollar	39	estallar	39	favorecer	20
enrosacar	68	<b>estar</b>	<b>35</b>	felicitar	39
ensanchar	39	estimular	39	festejar	39
ensayar	39	estirar	39	fiar	31
enseñar	39	estorbar	39	fichar	39
ensuciar	39	estornudar	39	figurar	39
<b>entender</b>	<b>30</b>	estrangular	39	<b>hablar</b>	<b>39</b>
enterarse	39	estrechar	39	<b>hacer</b>	<b>40</b>
enterrar	55	estrellar	39	halagar	53
entrar	39	estrenar	39	hallar	39
entregar	53	estropear	39	hartar	39
entrenarse	39	estrujar	39	<b>hay</b>	<b>41</b>
entretener	74	estudiar	39	helar <sup>1</sup>	55
entrevistar	39	evacuar	39	heredar	39
entrometerse	16	evadir	81	herir	72
entusiasmar	39	evaluar	4	hervir	72
enumerar	39	evaporar	39	hinchar	39
envejecer	20	evitar	39	hojear	39
<b>enviar</b>	<b>31</b>	evolucionar	39	hospedar	39
envidiar	39	exagerar	39	huir	18
envolver	83	examinar	39	hundir	81
equivaler	77	fracasar	16	hurgar	53
equivocarse	68	exceptuar	4	ideal	39
<b>erguir</b>	<b>32</b>	excitar	39	identificar	68
erigir	25	exclamar	39	ignorar	39
<b>errar</b>	<b>33</b>	excluir	18	iluminar	39
eructar	39	exhibir	81	imaginar	39
escabullirse	37	exigir	25	imitar	39
escalar	39	existir	81	impedir	54
escandalizar	21	experimentar	39	imponer	57
escapar	39	explicar	68	importar	39
escarbar	39	explorar	39	importonar	39
escocer	14	explotar	39	imprimir	81
escoger	15	exponer	57	improvisar	39
esconder	16	exportar	39	impulsar	39
<b>escribir</b>	<b>34</b>	expresar	39	inaugurar	39
escuchar	39	exprimir	81	incendiar	39
escupir	81	expulsar	39	inclinarse	39
escurrir	81	extender	30	generar	39
esforzarse	46	extinguir	26	girar	39
esfumarse	39	extraer	76	gobernar	55
esmerarse	39	extrañar	39	golpear	39

indicar	68	llamar	39	notar	39	pecar	68
indignar	39	llegar	53	notificar	68	pedalear	39
inflar	39	llenar	39	nublarse <sup>1</sup>	39	<b>pedir</b>	<b>54</b>
influnciar	39	llevar	39	obedecer	20	pegar	53
influir	18	llover <sup>1</sup>	<b>45</b>	obligar	53	peinar	39
informar	39	localizar	21	obrar	39	pelar	39
ingeniar	39	lograr	39	observar	39	pelear	39
ingresar	39	luchar	39	obsesionar	39	pellizcar	68
inscribir	34	<b>lucir</b>	<b>46</b>	obstinarse	39	pender	16
insinuar	4	machacar	68	obtener	74	penetrar	39
insistir	81	madrugar	53	ocasionar	39	<b>pensar</b>	<b>55</b>
insolarse	39	malgastar	39	ocultar	39	percatarse	39
instalar	39	maltratar	39	ocupar	39	perder	30
insultar	39	mamar	39	ocurrir	81	perdonar	39
intentar	39	manchar	39	odiar	39	perfeccionar	39
interesarse	39	mandar	39	ofender	16	perforar	39
interpretar	39	manejar	39	ofrecer	20	perjudicar	68
interrogar	53	manifestar	55	<b>oír</b>	<b>51</b>	perjurar	39
interrumpir	81	manipular	39	<b>oler</b>	<b>52</b>	permanecer	20
intervenir	79	mantener	74	olvidar	39	permitir	81
introducir	17	maquillar	39	omitir	81	perseguir	71
inundar	39	marcar	68	omear	39	persuadir	81
invadir	81	marchar	39	operar	39	pertenecer	20
inventar	39	marear	39	opinar	39	pesar	39
invertir	72	masticar	68	oponer	57	pescar	68
invitar	39	medir	54	optar	39	pestañear	39
inyectar	39	mejorar	39	ordenar	39	piar	31
<b>ir</b>	<b>42</b>	mencionar	39	ordeñar	39	picar	68
irritar	39	mentir	72	organizar	21	pillar	39
izar	21	merendar	55	originar	39	pinchar	39
jalar	39	meter	16	orinar	39	pintar	39
jubilarse	39	mirar	39	osar	39	pisar	39
<b>jugar</b>	<b>43</b>	mojar	39	oscilar	39	pitar	39
juntar	39	moler	48	oscurecer	20	planchar	39
jurar	39	montar	39	oxidar	39	planear	39
justificar	68	morder	48	padecer	39	planificar	68
juzgar	53	<b>morir</b>	<b>47</b>	<b>pagar</b>	<b>53</b>	plantar	39
ladrar	39	<b>mover</b>	<b>48</b>	palpar	39	plantear	39
lamentar	39	mudar	39	palpitar	39	platicar	68
lamer	16	lanzar	21	parar	39	plegar	50
lanzar	21	latir	81	parecer	20	<b>poder</b>	<b>56</b>
lavar	39	<b>nacer</b>	<b>49</b>	parpadear	39	podrir	81
<b>leer</b>	<b>44</b>	nadar	39	participar	39	<b>poner</b>	<b>57</b>
levantar	39	narrar	39	partir	81	portarse	39
liar	31	naturalizarse	21	pasar	39	posar	39
liberar	39	navegar	53	pasear	39	poseer	44
librar	39	necesitar	39	psamar	39	posponer	57
ligar	53	<b>negar</b>	<b>50</b>	pastar	39	practicar	68
limitar	39	negociar	39	patear	39	precipitar	39
limpiar	39	nevar <sup>1</sup>	55	patinar	39	precisar	39
		nombrar	39	patrocinar	39	predecir	24



predicar	68	rasgar	53	remar	39	rociar	31
preferir	72	rasurarse	39	remedar	39	rodar	19
preguntar	39	rayar	39	remediar	39	rociar	31
premiar	39	reaccionar	39	remitir	81	rodar	19
prender	16	realizar	21	remojar	39	rodear	39
preocupar	39	rebajar	39	remover	48	<b>rogar</b>	<b>65</b>
preparar	39	rebelarse	39	rendir	54	<b>romper</b>	<b>66</b>
prescindir	81	rebotar	39	renovar	19	roncar	68
presenciar	39	recalcar	68	rentar	39	ronronear	39
presentar	39	recargar	53	<b>refirir</b>	<b>62</b>	rozar	21
presionar	39	rechazar	21	reparar	39	ruborizarse	21
prestar	39	recibir	81	repartir	81	rugir	25
presumir	81	reciclar	39	repasar	39	<b>saber</b>	<b>67</b>
pretender	16	recitar	39	repetir	54	<b>sacar</b>	<b>68</b>
prevenir	79	reclamar	39	repostar	39	sacudir	81
prever	80	recoger	15	reprobar	19	<b>salir</b>	<b>69</b>
privar	39	recomendar	55	reprochar	39	salpicar	68
probar	19	reconciliar	39	reproducir	17	saltar	39
proclamar	39	reconocer	20	resaltar	39	saludar	39
procurar	39	reconstruir	18	resbalar	39	salvar	39
producir	17	recordar	39	rescatar	39	sangrar	39
programar	39	recorrer	16	reservar	39	<b>satisfacer</b>	<b>70</b>
progresar	39	recortar	39	resfriarse	31	sazonar	39
<b>prohibir</b>	<b>58</b>	recostar	19	resistir	81	secar	68
prolongar	53	recuperar	39	<b>resolver</b>	<b>63</b>	secuestrar	39
prometer	16	recurrir	81	respaldar	39	<b>seguir</b>	<b>71</b>
pronosticar	68	redactar	39	respetar	39	seleccionar	39
pronunciar	39	reducir	17	respirar	39	sembrar	55
propagar	53	reembolsar	39	responder	16	sentar	55
proponer	57	reemplazar	21	resquebrajar	39	<b>sentir</b>	<b>72</b>
proporcionar	39	referir	72	restablecer	20	señalar	39
prosperar	39	reflexionar	39	restar	39	separar	39
proteger	15	reformar	39	restaurar	39	<b>ser</b>	<b>73</b>
protestar	39	refrescar	68	restegar	53	serrar	55
provocar	68	refugiarse	39	resultar	39	servir	54
proyectar	39	regalar	39	resumir	81	significar	68
publicar	68	regañar	39	retar	39	silbar	39
pudrir <sup>2</sup>	81	regar	50	retirar	39	sobrar	39
pulir	81	regatear	39	retorcer	75	sobrevivir	81
pulsar	39	registrar	39	retransmitir	81	soler <sup>3</sup>	48
quebrar	55	regresar	39	retrasar	39	solicitar	39
quedar	39	regular	39	retroceder	16	soltar	19
quejarse	39	rehacer	40	<b>reunir</b>	<b>64</b>	solucionar	39
quemar	39	rehogar	53	revelar	39	sonar	19
<b>querer</b>	<b>59</b>	<b>rehusar</b>	<b>60</b>	reventar	55	sonreír	61
quitar	39	reincorporarse	39	revisar	39	soñar	19
rajár	39	<b>reír</b>	<b>61</b>	revolver	83	soplar	39
rallar	39	relacionar	39	rezar	21	soportar	39
rapar	39	relajar	39	ridiculizar	21	sorber	16
raptar	39	relucir	45	rizar	21	sorprender	16
rascar	68	rellenar	39	robar	39	sospechar	39

sostener	74	tejer	16	transformar	39	vendar	39
soterrar	39	telefonar	39	transmitir	81	vender	16
subir	81	televisar	39	transportar	39	vengar	53
subrayar	39	temblar	55	trasladar	39	<b>venir</b>	<b>79</b>
subvencionar	39	temer	16	trasnochar	39	ventilar	39
suceder	16	tender	30	traspasar	39	<b>ver</b>	<b>80</b>
sudar	39	<b>tener</b>	<b>74</b>	trasplantar	39	veranear	39
sufrir	81	tensar	39	tratar	39	verificar	68
sugerir	72	tentar	55	trazar	21	verter	30
sujetar	39	teñir	62	trepár	39	vestir	54
sumar	39	terciar	39	trillar	39	viajar	39
suministrar	39	tergiversar	39	trinchar	39	vibrar	39
superar	39	terminar	39	triturar	39	viciar	39
suplicar	68	timar	39	triunfar	39	vigilar	39
suponer	57	tirar	39	tronar <sup>1</sup>	19	vindicar	68
suprimir	81	tiritar	39	tronchar	39	violar	39
surgir	25	titubear	39	tropezar	29	visitar	39
suspender	16	titularse	39	trotar	39	vitorear	39
suspirar	39	tocar	68	tumbar	39	vituperar	39
sustituir	18	tolerar	39	turnarse	39	vivificar	68
susurrar	39	tomear	39	tutear	39	<b>vivir</b>	<b>81</b>
tachar	39	topar	39	unir	81	volar	19
taladrar	39	<b>torcer</b>	<b>75</b>	untar	39	<b>volcar</b>	<b>82</b>
tallar	39	torear	39	usar	39	<b>volver</b>	<b>83</b>
tambalearse	39	torturar	39	utilizar	39	vomitár	39
tantear	39	tosear	16	vaciar	31	votar	39
tapar	39	vacilar	39	vacunar	39	zambullirse	4
tapizar	21	vacunar	39	vagar	53	zampar	39
tararear	39	vagar	17	<b>valer</b>	<b>77</b>	zarpar	39
tardar	39	valorar	53	valorar	39	zumbar	39
tartamudear	39	variar	39	variar	31	<b>zurcir</b>	<b>4</b>
tatuar	4	tramitar	39	velar	39	zurrar	39
teclear	39	tranquilizar	21	<b>vencer</b>	<b>78</b>		

## Notes

- 1) The verbs **amanecer**, **anochecer**, **atardecer**, **granizar**, **helar**, **llover**, **nevar**, **nublarse** and **tronar** are used almost exclusively in the infinitive and third person singular forms.
- 2) The **past participle** of the verb **pudrir** is **podrido**.
- 3) The verb **soler** is used only in the **present** and **imperfect indicative**.



## THE ALPHABET

► The Spanish alphabet is pronounced differently from the way it is pronounced in English. Use the list below to help you sound out the letters.

<b>A, a</b>	[a]	(ah)	like 'a' in 'la'
<b>B, b</b>	[be]	(bay)	
<b>C, c</b>	[θe]	(thay)	
<b>Ch, ch</b>	[tʃe]	(chay)	
<b>D, d</b>	[de]	(day)	
<b>E, e</b>	[e]	(ay)	
<b>F, f</b>	[ʔefe]	(efay)	
<b>G, g</b>	[xe]	(chay)	like 'ch' in Scottish 'loch'
<b>H, h</b>	[ʔatʃe]	(atshay)	
<b>I, i</b>	[i]	(ee)	
<b>J, j</b>	[ʔxota]	(chota)	like 'ch' in Scottish 'loch'
<b>K, k</b>	[ka]	(ka)	
<b>L, l</b>	[ʔele]	(elay)	
<b>Li, ll</b>	[ʔeʎe]	(elyay)	
<b>M, m</b>	[ʔeme]	(emay)	
<b>N, n</b>	[ʔene]	(enay)	
<b>Ñ, ñ</b>	[ʔeɲe]	(enyay)	
<b>O, o</b>	[o]	(oh)	
<b>P, p</b>	[pe]	(pay)	
<b>Q, q</b>	[ku]	(koo)	
<b>R, r</b>	[ʔere]	(eray)	
<b>Rr, rr</b>	[ʔerre]	(erray)	
<b>S, s</b>	[ʔese]	(esay)	
<b>T, t</b>	[te]	(tay)	
<b>U, u</b>	[u]	(oo)	
<b>V, v</b>	[ʔuβe]	(oobay)	
<b>W, w</b>	[ʔuβeʔdoble]	(oobaydoblay)	
<b>X, x</b>	[ʔekis]	(ekees)	
<b>Y, y</b>	[iʔvrjeva]	(ee-griayga)	
<b>Z, z</b>	[ʔeta]	(thayta)	



# The easiest way to start learning Spanish

Easy Learning Spanish Grammar is part of the bestselling and acclaimed Easy Learning range, and is ideal for school and home study

## Easy to use

all you need to know about Spanish grammar and verbs

**What is a pronoun**  
A pronoun is a word used to refer to someone or something mentioned, or wanted to name someone or something.  
*none.*

## Easy to read

clear layout with colour

### Volaverunt

**?** Note that *mi* comes from *mi* (me) and does not have

► These pronouns

¿A ti?

## Easy to understand

thousands of examples show you the right way to use Spanish grammar

### Word order

The indirect object

**Sofía os ha**

**¿Os ha escrito?**

Buy this book and start using Collins dictionaries and study packs online for free at [www.collinslanguage.com/easyresources](http://www.collinslanguage.com/easyresources)\*  
\* see inside for terms and conditions

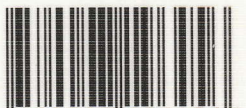


The Open University

SET BOOK

£6.99 CAN\$13.95

ISBN 978-0-00-719645-6



9 780007 196456 >

www.collinslanguage.com